

The Lovely Lady

Mary Hunter Austin



The Project Gutenberg EBook of The Lovely Lady, by Mary Austin

This eBook is for the use of anyone anywhere at no cost and with almost no restrictions whatsoever. You may copy it, give it away or re-use it under the terms of the Project Gutenberg License included with this eBook or online at www.gutenberg.net

Title: The Lovely Lady

Author: Mary Austin

Illustrator: Gordon Grant

Release Date: January 14, 2007 [EBook #20359]

Language: English

*** START OF THIS PROJECT GUTENBERG EBOOK THE LOVELY LADY ***

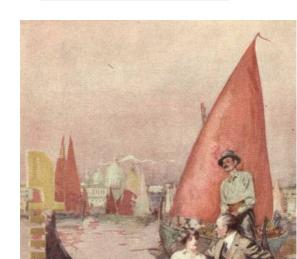
Produced by Hillie Plantinga and the Online Distributed Proofreading Team at http://www.pgdp.net (This file was produced from images generously made available by The Internet Archive/American Libraries.)

Transcriber's notes

Four typographical errors have been corrected, this is indicated in the html like this, hover with the mouse over the word for an explanation.

THE LOVELY LADY

By the same author
A WOMAN OF GENUS
THE ARROW MAKER
THE GREEN BOUCH
CHRIST IN ITALY





"It was one thin web of rose and gold over lakes of burnished light...."

THE LOVELY LADY

By Mary Austin



Frontispiece by Gordon Grant

Garden City New York DOUBLEDAY, PAGE & COMPANY 1913

Copyright, 1913, by
DOUBLEDAY, PAGE & COMPANY
All rights reserved, including that of
translation into Foreign Languages,
including the Scandinavian.

To J. AND E. THE COMPANIONS OF THE GONDOLA

CONTENTS

PAGE
PART ONE
In which Peter meets a Dragon, and the Lovely Lady makes her appearance. $\underline{3}$
PART TWO
In which Peter becomes invisible on the way to growing rich. $\underline{37}$
PART THREE
In which Peter becomes a bachelor. $\underline{59}$
PART FOUR
In which the Lovely Lady makes a final appearance. 107

ILLUSTRATIONS

It was one thin web of rose and gold over lakes of burn	<u>ısnea iignt"</u>
	_

PART ONE

IN WHICH PETER

MEETS A DRAGON, AND

THE LOVELY LADY

MAKES HER APPEARANCE



PART ONE

IN WHICH PETER MEETS A DRAGON, AND THE LOVELY LADY MAKES HER APPEARANCE

THE WALLS OF THE WONDERFUL HOUSE ROSE UP STRAIGHT AND SHINING, PALE GREENISH GOLD AS THE SLANT SUNLIGHT ON THE ORCHARD GRASS UNDER THE applie trees; the windows that sprang arching to the summer blueness LET IN THE SCENT OF THE CLUSTER ROSE AT THE TURN OF THE PENCE, BEGINNING TO RISE ABOVE THE DUSTY SMELL OF THE COUNTRY ROBE, AND THE EVENING CLANDUR OF THE BIRDS IN BLOOMBURY WOOD. AS IT DIMED AND THE THE STAND OF THE BIRDS OF THE WORLD OF THE BIRDS OF THE

RISE ABOVE THE DUSTY SMELL OF THE COUNTRY ROADS, AND THE EVENING CLAMOUR OF THE BRIDS IN BLOOMBURY WOOD. AS IT DIMMED AND WITHOREW, THE SHINNG OF THE WALLS CAME OUT MORE CLEARLY. PETER SAW THEN THAT THEY WHERE ALL OF COLOURED RICTURES WROUGHT FLAT UPON THE GOLD, AND AS THE GLOW OF IT INCREASED THEY BEGAN TO SWIELL AND STIR LIKE A WOOD WAKING. THEY LEANED OUT FROM THE WALLS, LOCKING ALL ONE WAY TOWARD the increasing light and tap-tap of the Princess' feet along the halls.

"Peter, oh. Peter!"

THE TAP-TAPPING GREW SHARP AND NEARER LIKE THE SOUND OF A CRUTCH ON

"Oh, Peter, you are always a-reading and a-reading!"

a wooden veranda, and the voice was Ellen's.

PETER ROLLED OFF THE LONG SETTLE WHERE HE HAD BEEN STRETCHED AND PUT the book in his pocket apologetically.

"I was just going to quit," he said; "did you want anything, Ellen?"

"THE FIGNIC IS COMING BACK; ITHOUGHT WE COULD GO DOWN TO THE TURN TO MEET THEM. MIRS. SIBLEY SAID SHE WOULD SAVE ME SOME THINGS FROM the luncheon."

IF THERE WAS A LITTLE STING TO PETER IN ELLEN'S EAGERNESS, IT WAS EVIDENCE AT LEAST, HOW COMPLETELY HE AND HIS MOTHER HAD KEPT HER FROM REALIZING THAT IT WAS CHIEFLY BECAUSE OF THER NOT BEING ABLE TO AFFORD THE WELL-PILLED BASKET DEWANDED BY A BLOOMBURY PRONC THAT THEY HAD NOT ACCEPTED THE INVITATION. ELLEN HAD THOUGHT IT WAS

BECAUSE BET. THE MARE COULD NOT BE SPARED ALL DAY FROM THE PLOUGHING NOR PETER FROM HOBING THE GARDBN, AND HER MOTHER WAS TOO BLISY WITH THE PLAID GINGHAM DRESS SHE WAS MAKING FOR THE MINISTER'S WIFE, TO DO ANY BAKING. IT MEANT TO ELLEN, THE BROKEN FRAGMENTS OF THE LUNCHEON, JUST SO MUCH OF WHAT A PIONIC SHOULD MEAN: THE RIDE IN THE DUSTY MORNING. SWINGS UNDER THE TREES. FASY GAMES THAT SHE COLLD. PLAY, LEMONADE, PAILS AND PAILS OF IT, PINK HAM SANDWICHES AND FROSTED CAKE: AND IF ELLEN COULD HAVE ANY OF THESE. SHE WAS HAVING A LITTLE PIECE OF THE PICNIC. WHAT IT WOULD HAVE MEANT PARTICULARLY TO PETER OVER AND ABOVE A DAY LET LOOSE, THE ARCHING BLMS, THE DEEP FERN.

OF BLOOMBURY WOOD, MIGHT HAVE BEEN SOME PASSAGES, PERHAPS. WHICH COULD BE TAKEN HOME AND MADE OVER INTO THE GROUNDWORK OF NEW AND INTERESTING ADVENTURES IN THE HOUSE FROM WHICH FUEN HAD. RECALLED HIM. THERE WAS A GIRL WITH JUNE APPLE CHEEKS AND BRIGHT brown eves at that picnic, who could have given points to princesses. HE FOLLOWED THE TAPPING OF HIS SISTER'S CRUTCH ALONG THE THICK, BITTER SMELLING DUST OF THE ROAD. RISING MORE AND MORE HEAVILY AS THE DBW GATHERED. UNTIL THEY CAME TO THE TURN BY THE CLUSTER ROSE AND HEARD BELOW THEM ON THE BRIDGE. THE DIN OF THE WHEELS AND THE GAY LAUGHTER. of the picnickers. "Hi. Peter!" "Hello, Ellen!"

"AWFUL SORRY YOU COULDN'T COME ... HAD A BULLY TIME... KILLED A

copperhead and two water snakes."

"Here. Ellen, catch ahold of this!"

AND WHILE SHE WAS ABOUT IT THE JUNE APPLE GIRL LEANED OVER THE END-

board of the wagon, and spoke softly to Peter.

"WE'RE GOING OVER TO HARVEY'S PASTURE NEXT WEDNESDAY AFTERNOON

BERRYING. IN THE DEMOCRAT WAGON WITH OUR TEAM, JIM HARVEY'S GOING TO DRIVE. WE MADE IT UP TO-DAY. SURELY YOU CAN GET AWAY FOR AN added. "I don't know.... I'd like it...." IT WAS NOT ALTOGETHER THE CALCULATION AS TO HOW MUCH EARLIER HE WOULD

AFTERNOON?" THAT WAS WHAT THE VOICE SAID. "TO BE WITH ME." THE EYES

HAVE TO GET UP THAT MORNING TO BE ABLE TO TAKE AN HOUR OFF IN THE AFTERNOON, THAT MADE PETER HESITATE, BUT THE SUDDEN SWIMMING OF HIS

SENSES ABOUT THE POINT OF MEETING EYES. "I'LL TELL YOU WHAT." HE SAID. "YOU COME BY FOR ELLEN, AND I'LL WALK OVER ABOUT FOUR AND RIDE HOME with you." "Oh." SAID THE GIRL; SHE DID NOT KNOW QUITE WHETHER TO TRIUMPH AT

HAVING GAINED SO MUCH OR TO BE DISAPPOINTED AT SO LITTLE. "I'LL BE expecting vou." THE HORSES CREAKED FORWARD IN THE HARNESS. THE DUST PUFFED UP FROM UNDER THE WHEELS AND DROWNED THE SWELL OF THE WILDING ROSE, IT FELL THOX ON THE PETALS AND A LITTLE ON PETER'S SPRIT, TOO, AS HE FOLLOWED

ELLEN BACK TO THE HOUSE, THOUGH IT NEVER COOLERED TO HIM TO THINK ANY MORE OF IT THAN THAT HE HAD BEEN WORKING TOO LONG IN THE HOT SLIN AND WAS VERY TIRED. IT DID NOT, HOWEVER, PREVENT HIS EATING HIS SHARE OF THE PIONIC DAINTIES AS HE SAT WITH HIS MOTHER AND ELLEN ON THE VERANDA. THEN AS THE SOFT FLITTER OF THE BATS' WINGS BEGAN IN THE DUSK. HE KISSED

them both and went early up to bed. PETER'S ROOM WAS CLOSE UNDER THE ROOF AND THAT WAS CLOSE UNDER THE

ELM BOUGHS: ALL HOURS HE COULD HEAR THEM FINGER IT WITH SOFT RUSTLING TOUCHES. THE BED WAS PULLED TO THE WINDOW THAT GAVE UPON THE DOWNSLOPE OF THE HILL: AT THE FOOT OF IT ONE SAW THE WHITE BLOOM-FACES

OF THE ALDERS LIFT AND BOW ABOVE THE FOLDED LEAVES. AND THE RISING OF

THE RIVER DAMP ACROSS THE PASTURES. ALL THE LIGHT REPLECTED FROM THE SKY

ABOVE BLOOMBURY WOOD WAS NO MORE THAN BYOUGH TO MAKE A GUMMER ON THE GLASS OF A PICTURE THAT HUNG AT THE FOOT OF PETER'S BED.

IT SERVED TO SHOW THE GILT OF THE NARROW FRAME AND THE SOFT BLACK OF THE

PRINT LIPON WHICH PETER HAD LOOKED SO MANY TIMES THAT HE THOUGHT NOW HE WAS STILL SEEING IT AS HE LAY STARING IN THE DUSK-A PICTURE OF A YOUNG MAN IN BRIGHT ARMOUR WITH LOOSENED HAIR. RIDING DOWN A PARTICULARLY LUMPY AND SWOLLEN DRAGON. FLAMES CAME OUT OF THE CREATURE'S MOUTH IN THE IMMEMORIAL FASHION OF DRAGONS. BUT THE YOUNG MAN WAS NOT HURT BY THEM. HE SAT THERE LIGHTLY, HIS HORSE CURVETTING, HIS LANCE THRUST DOWN THE DRAGON'S THROAT AND COMING OUT OF THE BACK OF HIS HEAD, DOING A GREAT DEED EASILY, THE WAY PEOPLE LIKE TO THINK OF GREAT THINGS BEING DONE. IT WAS A VERY NARROW PICTURE. SO NARROW THAT YOU MIGHT THINK THAT IT HAD SOMETHING TO DO WITH THE DRAGON'S DOUBLING ON HIMSELF AND THE CHARGER'S FOREFEET BEING UP IN THE AIR TO KEEP WITHIN THE LIMITS OF THE FRAME, AND THE EXCLUSION FROM IT OF THE PRINCESS. WHOM, AS HIS FATHER HAD TOLD HIM THE STORY, THE YOUNG KNIGHT GEORGE HAD RESCUED FROM THOSE DEVOURING JAWS. IT CAME OUT NOW, QUITE CLEARLY. THAT SHE MUST HAVE HAD CHEEKS AS RED AS JUNE APPLES AND EYES LIKE THE POOLS OF SPRING RAIN IN BLOOMBURY WOOD. AND HER NOT BEING THERE IN THE PICTURE WAS ONLY A GREATER SECURITY FOR HER AWAITING him at this moment in the House with the Shining Walls. THERE WAS, FOR THE BOY STILL STARING AT IT THROUGH THE DUSK, SOMETHING PARTICULARLY PERSONAL IN THE PICTURE, FOR EVER SINCE HIS FATHER HAD DIED, THREE YEARS AGO. PETER HAD HAD A DRAGON OF HIS OWN TO FIGHT. ITS NAME WAS MORTGAGE. IT HAD ITS LAIR IN LAWYER KEPLINGER'S OFFICE, FROM WHICH IT THREATENED TWICE YEARLY TO COME OUT AND EAT UP HIS MOTHER AND ELLEN AND THE LITTLE HOUSE AND FARM, AND REQUIRED TO HAVE ITS MOUTH. STOPPED WITH GREAT WARS OF INTEREST WHICH TOOK ALL PETER'S LABORIOUS DAYS TO SCRAPE TOGETHER. THIS YEAR, HOWEVER, HE HAD HOPES, IF THE garden turned out well, of lopping off a limb or a claw of the dragon by WAY OF A PAYMENT ON THE PRINCIPAL. WHICH SOMEHOW SEEMED TO BRING THE PRINCESS SO MUCH NEARER. THAT AS PETER LAY QUITE CONFORTABLY STARING UP AT THE GLIMMER ON THE WALL. THE FOUR GOLD LINES OF THE FRAME BEGAN TO STRETCH UP AND OUT AND THE DARK BLOCK OF THE PICTURE TO RECEDE UNTIL IT BECAME THE GREAT HALL OF A PALACE AGAIN, AND THERE WAS the Princess coming toward him in a golden shimmer. THERE WAS JUST SUCH ANOTHER GLOW ON THE AFTERNOON WHEN PETER WALKED OVER TO THE BERRYING AND CAME UP WITH THE APPLE-CHECKED GIRL WHOSE NAME WAS ADA. A GOOD HALF MILE FROM THE OTHERS. AS THEY

AND THERE WAS VERY LITTLE TO SAY AND NO NEED OF SAYING IT UNTIL THEY CAME TO THE HILL OVERLOCKING THE PASTURE, YELLOWING TOWARD THE BIND OF SUMMER, FILL OF LATE BLOOM AND MISTY COLOUR PASSING INSENSIBLY INTO LIGHT. THREADS OF GOSSAMER CAUGHT ON THE BINDS OF THE SORUB OR FLOATED FREE, CLINTING AS THEY TURNED AND BELLED IN THE WINDLESS AIR, TO TRICK THE imagination with the hint of robed, invisible presences.

"Oh, Peter, don't you wish it would stay like this always?"

CLIMBED TOGETHER OVER UNEVEN GROUND SHE GAVE HIM HER HAND TO HOLD.

"Like this," Peter gave her hand the tinjest soueze to show what there was about this that he would like to keep. "It's just as good to look at any season though," he insisted. "I was here hunting rabbits last writer, in February, and you could find all sorts of things in the runways where the brankles bent over and kept off the snow, blunches of befres and coloured leaves, and little green fern, and birds hopping in and out."

ADA SPREAD HER SKIRTS AS SHE SAT ON A FLAT BOULDER AND BEGAN STICKING

"Peter, what are you going to do this winter?"

leaves into Peter's hat

"I DON'T KNOW, I SHOULD LIKE TO GO OVER TO THE HIGH SCHOOL AT HARMONY, but I suppose I'll try to get a place to work near home."

"WE'VE BEEN CETTING UP A DANONG AND SINGING SCHOOL, TO BEGIN IN
OCTOBER THE TEACHER IS COMING FROM DASSONVILLE IT WILL BE ONCE A

WEBY, WE SING FOR AN HOUR AND THEN HAVE DANOING. IT WILL BE CHEAP AS cheap—only two dollars a month. I hope you can come."

"I DON'T KNOW, I'LL THINK ABOUT IT." HE WAS THINKING THEN THAT TWO DOLLARS

DID NOT SOUND MUCH, BUT WHEN YOU COME TO SUBTRACT IT FROM THE INTEREST IT WAS A GREAT DEAL, AND THEN THERE WOULD BE ELLEN TO PAY FOR, AND PERHAPS A DRESS FOR HER, AND DANCING SHOES FOR HIMSELF AND SINGING BOOKS. AND NO DOUBT AT THE DANCES THERE WOULD BE BASKET SUPPERS.

IT UP.... HE WANTS TO KEEP COMPANY WITH ME THIS WINTER." ADA WAS A
LITTLE NERVOUS ABOUT THIS, BUT AS SHE STOLE A GLANCE AT PETER'S FACE AS
HE LAY BITING AT A STEM OF GRASS, SHE GREW QUITE COMPORTABLE AGAIN.
"BUT I DON'T KNOW AS I WILL," SHE SAID. "I DON'T CARE VERY MUCH FOR JIM
HARVEY."

PETER POXED UP A STONE AND SHED IT JOYQUELY AT A THRUSH IN THE

"I SHOULD THINK YOU COULD COME IF YOU WANTED TO, JIM HARVEY'S GETTING

bushes. "And I don't know as I want you to," He declared boldly. "I'll come to That danong school if I possibly can Ada and if I can't you'll know it

THAT DANOING SCHOOL IF I POSSBLY CAN, ADA, AND IF I CAN'T YOU'LL KNOW IT isn't because I don't wish to."
"YOU MUST WANT TO WITH ALL YOUR MIGHT AND THAT'LL MAKE IT COME TRUE.
YOU can wish it on my amethyst ring."

"You won't take it off until October, Ada?"
"I TRULY WON'T." AND IT TOOK PETER SUCH A LONG TIME TO GET THE RING ON AND
HELD IN PLACE WHILE THE WISH WAS PROPERLY MADE, THAT IT WAS PRACTICALLY
NO TIME AT ALL UNTIL THE OTHERS FOUND THEM ON THE WAY HOME AS THEY

came laughing up the hill.

As it happened, however, Peter do not get to the danging school.

ONCE THAT WRITER. THE FIRST OF THE COLD SPELL ELLEN HAD SUPPED ON THE
ICE, TO THE FURTHER TRYING OF HER LAME BACK, AND THERE WERE THINGS TO BE

ONCE THAT WINTER. THE FIRST OF THE COLD SPELL ELLEN HAD SLIPPED ON THE ICE, TO THE FURTHER TRYING OF HER LAME BACK, AND THERE WERE THINGS TO BE DONE TO IT WHICH THE DOCTOR SAID COLLD NOT POSSIBLY BE PUT OFF, SO IT HAPPENED THAT THE MORTGAGE DRAGON DID NOT GET HIS PAYMENT AND PETER GAVE UP THE HIGH SCHOOL TO GET A FLACE IN GREENSLET'S GROCERY AT BLOOMBURY. AND SINCE THERE WERE THE BOOKS TO BE MADE UP AFTER STORM AND AS RET. THE MADE AS TEXT BEBLIC DRIVEN IN THE DELIVERY.

PETER GAVE UP THE HIGH SCHOOL TO GET A PLACE IN GREENSLEI'S GROCERY AT BLOOMBURY. AND SINCE THERE WERE THE BOOKS TO BE MADE UP AFTER SUPPER, AND AS BET, THE MARE, AFTER BEING DRIVEN IN THE DELIVERY WAGON ALL DAY, COLLD NOT BE LET STAND HALF THE NIGHT IN THE COLD AT THE SCHOOLHOUSE DOOR, IT TURNED OUT THAT PETER HAD NOT BEEN NOTE TO THE DANOING SCHOOL IN THE BROWNING HE HAD DONE SOMETHING FOR HUMBER F.

DANOING SCHOOL. IN THE BEGINNING HE HAD DONE SOMETHING FOR HINSELF
IN THE WAY OF A HALL FOR DANOING, THROWN OUT FROM THE HOUSE OF THE
Shining Walls, IN WHICH HE AND THE PRINCESS ADA, TO LOVELY, SOUNDLESS

OTHER SUCH AS NO BALLROOM COULD AFFORD;—BRIGHT STAR POINTED

CCCASIONS WHICH BROKE AND SCATTERED BEFORE THE LITTLE HINTS OF SOUND

THAT CREPT UP THE STAIR TO ADVISE HIM THAT ELLEN WAS STIFLING BACK THE
PAIN FOR FEAR OF WAKING HIM. THEY HAD MOVED ELLEN'S BED DOWNSTAIRS

AS A WAY OF GETTING ON BETTER WITH THE POSSIBILITY OF HER BEING BEDRIDDEN ALL THAT WINTER, AND THE TIMY WHISPERED MOAN RECALLED HIM TO THE DREAD THAT AS THE HALF YEARLY TERM CAME AROUND, WHAT WITH DOCTOR'S BILLS AND DELICACIES, THE MORTIGAGE DRAGON WOULD HAVE NOT EVEN HIS

sop of interest, and remain whole and threatening as before.

STRAINS, HAD WHIRLED AWAY, AND FOUND OCCASION TO SAY THINGS TO EACH

WHEN ELLEN WAS ABLE TO SIT UP IN BED THE MOTHER MOVED HER SEWING IN BESIDE IT. THEN PETER WOULD SIT ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THE LAMP WITH A BOOK, AND THE WALLS OF THE HOUSE ROSE UP FROM ITS PAGES GLOED FINELY, AND THE LICHTS WOULD COME OUT AND THE DANDING BESIN, BUT BEFORE HE

AND THE LIGHTS WOULD COME OUT AND THE DANOING BEGIN, BUT BEFORE HE could get more than a word with the Princess, he would hear Ellen:

"PETER, CH, PETER! I WISH YOU WOULDN'T BE ALWAYS WITH YOUR NOSE IN A book. I wish you would talk sometimes."

"What about. Ellen?"

interest in things."
"What sort of things?" Peter wished to know.

"Oh, Peter, you are the worst. I should think you would take some

"Why, who comes in the store, and what they say, and everything."

"Mrs. SLEASON WANTED US TO OPEN A KIT OF MACKEREL TO SEE IF SHE'D LIKE IT," BEGAN PETER LITERALLY, "AND WE PERSUADED HER TO TAKE TWO CANS OF sardines instead. Does that interest you?"

"Have you sold any of the blue tartan yet?"

"Ada Brown bought seven yards of it."

"Oh, Peter! And trimmings?"

MAKE IT UP FOR HER I HEARD MRS. BROWN SAY SHE WOULD CALL FOR THE linings."

"SHE'S HAVING IT MADE UP FOR JIM HARVEY'S BIRTHDAY," ELLEN GUESSED

"SIX YARDS OF BLACK VELVET RIBBON—YES. I FORGOT—MRS. BLACKWAN IS TO

SHREWOLY. "HE'S TWENTY-ONE, YOU KNOW.... PEOPLE SAY SHE'S BNGAGED to him."

PETER FELT THE WALLS OF THE HOUSE WHICH HAD STOOD OUT WAITING FOR HIM.

DURING THS INTERLUDE, FALL INWARD INTO THE GULF OF BLACKNESS. NOBODY said anything for two or three ticks of the large kitchen clock, and then Ellen burst out:

"I think she's a nasty, flirty, stuck-up thing; that's what I think!"

"Peter," demanded Ellen, "are you reading again?"

"I BEG YOUR PARDON, ELLEN." PETER DID NOT KNOW THAT HE HAD TURNED A

"DON'T YOU EVER WISH FOR ANYTHING FOR YOURSELF. PETER? DON'T YOU WISH.

page.

you were rich?"
"No. Ellen. I don't know that I ever do."

"Shs-hss! Ellen." said her mother.

BUT AS THE WINTER GOT ON AND THE NEWS OF ADA BROWN'S PNGAGENENT.

was confirmed, he must have wished it a great many times.

One evening late in January he was sitting with his mother very quietly

BY THE KITCHEN STOVE, THE FRONT OF WHICH WAS OPENED TO THROW OUT THE HEAT; THERE WAS THE GOOD SMELL OF THE SUPPER IN THE ROOM, FOR THOUGH HE HAD A MEAL WITH THE GREENSLETS AT SIX, HIS MOTHER ALWAYS MADE A POINT OF LINVING SOMETIMA HOT FOR MANAGED HE CAME IN EDOMESTICAL.

POINT OF HAVING SOMETHING HOT FOR HIM WHEN HE CAME IN FROM BEDDING

DOWN THE MARE, AND THE STEAM OF IT ON THE WINDOW-PANES MADE DULL

SMEARS OF THE REFLECTED LIGHT. THE SHADE OF THE LAMP WAS DRAWN DOWN

LINTIL THE CHLING OF THE ROOM WAS ALL IN SHADOW SAVE FOR THE BRIGHT

his thoughts and led him to say to his mother: "Why did my father never get rich?" "I HAROLY KNOW. PETER. HE USED TO SAY THAT HE COULDN'T AFFORD IT. THERE WERE SO MANY OTHER THINGS HE WISHED TO DO: AND I WISHED THEM, TOO. WHEN WE WERE YOUNG WE DID THEM TOGETHER. THEN YOUR FATHER WAS THE SORT OF MAN WHO ALWAYS GAVE TOO MUCH AND TOOK TOO LITTLE. I REMEMBER

HIS SAYING ONCE THAT NO ONE WHO LOVED HIS FELLOWMAN VERY MUCH.

ESCAPE FROM THE CHIMNEY WHICH SHONE DIRECTLY OVERHEAD. ROUND AND YELLOW AS TWENTY DOLLARS, AND AS PETER LEANED BACK IN HIS CHAIR. LOOKING UP. IT MIGHT HAVE BEEN THAT RESEMBLANCE WHICH GAVE A TURN TO

"Do vou wish he had?"

"I DON'T KNOW THAT ETHER. NO, NOT IF HE WAS HAPPIER THE WAY HE WAS.

could aet rich."

AND WE WE'RE HAPPY. THINGS WOULD HAVE COME OUT ALL RIGHT IF IT HADN'T BEEN FOR THE ACCIDENT WHEN THE THRESHER BROKE, AND HIS BEING ILL SO LONG AFTERWARD. AND MY PEOPLE WEREN'T SO KIND AS THEY MIGHT HAVE

BEEN, YOU SEE, THEY ALWAYS THOUGHT HIM A LITTLE QUEER, BEFORE WE WERE MARRIED. BEFORE WE WERE EVEN BYGAGED. HE HAD HAD A LITTLE MONEY. IT

HAD BEEN LEFT HIM. AND INSTEAD OF INVESTING IT AS ANYBODY IN BLOOMBURY WOULD, HE SPENT IT IN TRAVEL. I REVIEWBER HIS SAYING THAT HIS MEMORIES OF ITALY WERE THE BEST INVESTMENT HE COULD HAVE MADE. BUT AFTERWARD, WHEN HE WAS IN TROUBLE, THEY THREW IT UP TO HIM, WE HAD

took bronchitis and died." SHE WIPED HER EYES QUIETLY FOR A WHILE, AND THE KETTLE ON THE STOVE began to sing soothingly, and presently Peter ventured:

"Do you wish I would get rich?"

"YES, PETER, I DO. WE ARE ALL LIKE THAT, I SUPPOSE, WE GROWN-UPS. THINGS WE MANAGE TO GET ALONG WITHOUT OURSELVES. WE WANT FOR OUR

CHLDREN. I HOPE YOU WILL BE A RICH MAN SOME DAY; BUT, PETER, I DON'T

NEVER GOT IN DEBT BEFORE ... AND THEN JUST AS HE WAS GETTING ROUND. HE

WHAT HE THOUGHT WAS BEST. HE MIGHT HAVE LEFT ME WITH MORE MONEY AND FEWER HAPPY MEWORIES—AND THAT IS WHAT WOMEN VALUE MOST. PETER;—THE RIGHT SORT OF WOMEN. THERE ARE SOME WHO CAN'T GET ALONG WITHOUT things: CLOTHES, AND FLENTURE, AND CARRAGES, ADA BROWN IS THAT KIND: SOMETIMES I'M AFRAID ELLEN IS A LITTLE. SHE TAKES AFTER MY family." "It is partly on account of Ellen that I want to get rich."

WANT YOU TO THINK IT A REFLECTION ON YOUR FATHER THAT HE WASN'T. HE HAD

"YOU MUSTN'T TAKE IT TOO HARD. PETER: WE'VE ALWAYS GOT ALONG somehow, and nobody in Bloombury is very rich."

PETER TURNED THAT OVER IN HIS MIND THE WHOLE OF A RAW AND SLEETY

FEBRUARY AND ONE DAY WHEN NOBODY CAME INTO THE STORE FROM TEN TILL

FOUR, AND LOOSE WINDS WENT IN A PACK ABOUT THE VILLAGE STREETS, CASTING UP DRY. ICY DUST WHERE NOW AND THEN SOME SHARP MUZZLE REARED OUT OF THE PRESS AS THEY TURNED THE CORNERS. HE SPOKE TO MR. GREENSLET ABOUT

IT. IT WAS SO COLD THAT DAY THAT NETHER THE RED APPLES IN THE BARRELS NOR THE CRIMSON CRANBERRIES NOR THE YELLOWING HAMS ON THE RAFTERS COLLD. CONTRIBUTE ANY APPEARANCE OF WARMTH TO THE INTERIOR OF THE CROCERY A KIND OF ICY VARNISH OF COLD OVERLAID. THE GAY LABLES OF THE CANNED

GOODS: THE REMNANTS OF RED AND BLUE TARTAN EXPOSED FOR SALE LOOKED COARSE-GRAINED WITH THE COLD. AND COLD SLIPS OF RIBBONS CLUNG TO THE GLASS OF THE CASES LIKE THE TONGLES OF CHLDREN TIPPED TO THE PROSTED. PANES. EVEN THE SUPER-HEATED STOVE TOOK ON A PURPLISH TINGE OF chilblains, roughed by the wind. A kind of arctic stillness pervaded the place, out of which the two men hailed each other at intervals as from immeasurable deeps of space.

"Mr. Greenslet," ventured Peter at last, "are you a rich man?"

"Not by a long sight." "Why?" auestioned Peter.

"Not built that way."

THE GROCER LAPSED BACK INTO THE SILENCE AND SEEMED TO LEAN AGAINST it meditatively. The wolf wind howled about the corners and cast snow LIKE FOWDERED GLASS UPON THE WINDOWS CONTEMPTUOUSLY, AND TIME WENT BY WITH A LARGE DELIBERATE MOVEMENT LIKE A FAT MAN TURNING OVER, before Peter hailed again.

MR. GREENSLET REACHED OUT FOR THE DAMPER OF THE STOVE OSTENSIBLY TO
SHAKE DOWN THE ASHES, BUT REALLY TO PULL HIMSELF UP OUT OF THE
soundless spaces of thought.

"WHEN I WAS YOUR AGE YES. THOUGHT I WAS GOING TO BE." THE SHAKING

"Did you ever want to be?"

OF THE DAMPER SEEMED TO LOOSEN THE SPRINGS OF SPEECH IN HIM. "I WAS
UP IN THE CITY WORKING FOR SEGEL BROTHERS; BEGAN AS A BUNDLE BOY AND
MEANT TO BE ONE OF THE PARTINERS. BUT BY THE TIME I WORKED UP TO FANCY
GOODS I REALIZED THAT I WOLLD HAVE TO BE AS OLD AS METHUSELAH TO
MAKE IT AT THAT RATE. AND MRS. GREENSLET DIDN'T LIKE THE CITY: SHE WAS A

Bloombury girl. It wasn't any place for the children."

"So you came back?"

"WE HAD SAVED A LITTLE. I BOUGHT OUT THIS FLACE AND PUT IN A FEW NOTIONS
I'd got from Siegel's. I'm comfortably off. but I'm not rich."

"Would you like to be?"
"I DON' KNOW, I DON' KNOW. I'D LIKE TO GIVE THE BOYS A BETTER START THAN I HAD, BUT I'M MY OWN BOSS HERE AND ONE OF THE LEADING MEN. THAT'S always something."

PETER WENT AND LOOKED OUT OF THE SMLDGED WINDOWS WHILE HE CONSIDERED THIS. THE LONG SCRAPES OF THE WIND IN THE LOOSE SNOW WERE LIKE THE SCRATCHES OF GREAT CLAWS. IT WAS NOW ABOUT MAIL TIME AND A few people began to stir in the street; the clear light and the cold gave

"Does anybody ever get rich in Bloombury?"

them a poverty-bitten look.

"Not that I know of. There's Mr. Dassonville in Harmony—Dave Dassonville, the richest man in these parts."

"I suppose he could tell me how to go about it?"

"I suppose he would if he knows. Mostly these things just happen."

PETER DID NOT SAY ANYTHING MORE JUST THEN: HE WAS WATCHING A MAN

AND A GRL OF ABOUT HIS OWN AGE WHO HAD COME OUT OF A FRAME HOUSE FARTHER DOWN THE STREET. THE YOUNG MAN WAS WALKING SO AS TO SHELD HER FROM THE WIND, HER ROSY CHEEK WAS AT HIS SHOULDER, AND SHE smilled up at him over her muff, from dark, bright eyes.

"What's set you on to talk about Riches? Thinking of doing something in that line yourself?"

"YES," SAID PETER, KICKING AT THE BASEBOARD WITH HIS TOES. "I DON'T KNOW HOW IT IS TO BE DONE, BUT I'VE GOT TO BE RICH. I'VE JUST SIMPLY GOT

KNOW HOW IT IS TO BE DONE, BUT IN EQOT TO BE RICH. IN EJUST SIMPLY GOT to."

IT WAS ALONG IN THE BEGINNING OF SPRING ON A DAY FULL OF WET CLOUD AND CLEARING WIND, THAT PETER WALKED OVER TO HARMONY TO INQUIRE OF MR. DAVID DASSONVILLE THE WAY TO GROW RICH. IT WAS SUNDAY AFTERNOON AND THE AIR SWEET WITH THE SAP ADRIP FROM THE ORCHAROS LATELY PRUNED AND the smell of the country road dried to elasticity by the winds of March.

THE AIR SWEET WITH THE SAP ADRIP FROM THE ORCHARDS LATELY PRUNED AND the smell of the country road dried to elasticity by the winds of March.

BETWEEN TIMOTY AND THE CONVICTION THAT A WEEK DAY WOULD HAVE BEEN BETTER SUITED TO HIS BUSINESS, HE DREW ON TO THE PLACE OF HIS ERRAND VIERY SLOWLY, FOR HE WAS SORE WITH THE RAKING OF THE DRAGON'S CLAWS, AND UNRESTED. IT HAD BEEN A TERRIBLE SCRAFE TO GET TOOSETHER THE LAST INSTALMENT OF INTEREST, AND SINCE ELLEN HAD SHATTIRED IT WITH THE GOSSIP ABOUT ADA BROWN'S BINGAGENENT, THERE HAD BEEN NO HOUSE WITH SHINING WALLS FOR PEIER TO WITHDRAW INTO OUT OF THE DRAGON'S BREATH OF POVERTY; above all, no Princess.

HE DID NOT KNOW WHERE THE HOUSE HAD COME FROM ANY MORE THAN HE KNEW NOW WHERE IT HAD GONE. IT WAS A GIFT OUT OF HIS CHILDHOOD TO HIS SHY, UNFRIENDED YOUTH, BUT HE UNDERSTOOD THAT IF EVER ITS WALLS SHOULD WAVER AND RISE AGAIN TO BNOLOSE HIS DREAMS, THERE WOULD BE NO PRINCESS. NEVER ANY MORE. PRINCESSES WERE FOR FAIRY TALES; GIRLS WANTED THINGS. THERE WAS HIS MOTHER TOO—HE HAD WISHED SO TO GET HER A NEW DRESS THIS WINTER. IT WAS AN ACHE TO HIM TO CUT OFF YARDS AND YARDS OF HANDSOME STUFFS AT MIR. GREENSLET'S, AND ALL THE LONGING IN THE WORLD HAD NOT AVAILED TO GET ONE OF THEM FOR HIS MOTHER. PLANLY THE MASTERY OF THINGS WAS ACCOMPLISHED BY BBING RICH; HE WAS ON HIS WAY TO MIR. DASSONVILLE TO GIRD OUT HOW IT WAS GONE.

IT WAS QUITE FOUR OF THE QLOCK WHEN HE PAUSED AT THE BOTTOM OF THE DASSONVILLE LAWN TO LOCK UP AT THE LACE CURTAINS AT THE TALL FRENCH WINDOWS. NOBODY IN BLOOMBURY WAS RICH BNOUGH TO HAVE LACE CURTAINS AT ALL THE WINDOWS, AND THE BOY'S SPIRT ROSE AT THE SUBSTANTIAL

SITTING IN HIS LIBRARY, KEEPING THE PLACE WITH HIS FINGER IN THE BOOK HE had been reading to his wife. Peter also found himself a little at a loss TO KNOW HOW TO BEGIN IN THE PRESENCE OF THIS LADY. FOR HE CONSIDERED IT A MATTER QUITE BETWEEN MEN. BUT SUDDENLY SHE LOOKED UP AND SMILED. IT CAME OUT ON HER FACE FRESH AND DELICATELY AS AN APPLE ORCHARD. BREAKING TO BLOOM, AND BESIDES MAKING IT QUITE SPRING IN THE ROOM. DISCOVERED IN HERSELF A NEW EVIDENCE OF THE COMPETENCY OF MR. DAVID. DASSONVILLE TO ADVISE THE WAY OF RICHES. SHE LOOKED FRAGILE AND

evidence of being at last fairly in the track of his desire. HE FOUND MR. DASSONVILLE WILLING TO RECEIVE HIM IN QUITE A FRIBNOLY WAY.

EXPENSIVE AS SHE SAT IN HER SILKEN SHAWL. HER DARK HAIR LIFTED UP IN A HALF MOON FROM HER BROW. HER HANDS LYING IN HER LAP HALF-COVERED WITH THE LACE OF HER SLEEVES. WHITE AND PERFECT LIKE TWIN FLOWERS. HE SAW RINGS FLASHING ON THE ONE SHE LIFTED TO MOTION TO THE MAID TO BRING A chair "IF YOU HAVE WALKED OVER FROM BLOOMBURY YOU MUST BE TIRED." SHE said, "and chilled, perhaps. Come nearer the fire." "No. THANK YOU." PETER HAD MANAGED. "I AM QUITE WARM." AS IN FACT HE WAS, AND A LITTLE FLUSHED. HE SAT DOWN PROVISIONALLY ON THE EDGE OF THE chair and looked at Mr. Dassonville

"I CAME ON BUSINESS. I DON'T KNOW IF YOU WILL MIND ITS BEING SUNDAY. but I couldn't get away from the store on other days." "Quite right, quite right," Mr. Dassonville had lost his place in the

BOOK AND LAID IT ON HIS KNEE. "PRIVATE BUSINESS? MY DEAR, PERHAPS

"Oh. NO-NO." PROTESTED PETER HANDSOMELY. "I'D RATHER SHE STAYED. IT

isn't. At least ... I don't know if you will consider it private or not."

"Go on." urged Mr. Dassonville.

"I just came to ask you." Peter explained, "if you don't mind telling me. how you got rich?"

This for a beginning, was, on the face of IT, disconcerting. Peter Looked about at the rows of books, at the thick, soft carret and the Leather-Covered runture, and at the rings on Miris. Diassonville's hand. If Mir. Diassonville were not rich, how then—unless—

"But bless you, young man," exclaimed Mr. Dassonville, "I'm not rich."

"I BEG YOUR PARDON, SIR, BUT I THOUGHT—THAT IS, EVERYBODY SAYS YOU ARE the richest man in these parts."

"AS TO THAT, WELL, PERHAPS, I HAVE A LITTLE MORE MONEY THAN MY

neighbours." Peter breathed relief. The beautiful Mrs. Dassonville's rings were

paid for, then.
"But as to being *rich*, why, when you come to a really rich man all l've

GOT WOULDN'T BE A PINCH TO HIM." MR. DASSONVILLE ILLUSTRATED WITH HIS OWN THUMB AND PINGERS HOW LITTLE THAT WOULD BE. "WE DON'T HAVE REALLY RICH MBN IN A PLACE LIKE HARWONY," HE CONCLUDED. "YOU HAVE TO GO TO the city for that."

"You've got everything you want, haven't you?"

Mr. Dassonville Looked over at his wife. and the smile bloomed

AGAIN, HE SMLED QUIETLY TO HIMSELF AS HE ADMITTED IT. "YES, I'VE GOT everything I want."

THEY WERE QUIET, ALL OF THEM, FOR A LITTLE WHILE, WITH PETER TURNING HIS HAT OVER IN HIS HANDS AND MR. DASSONVILLE LAYING THE TIPS OF HIS PROSERS

together before him, resting his elbows on the arms of the chair.

"I wish," said Peter at last, "you would tell me how you did it."

"HOW I GOT MORE MONEY THAN MY NEIGHBOURS? WELL, I WASN'T BORN WITH IT."

This was distinctly encouraging. Neither was Peter.

"No two Men, I suppose, Make Money in the Same Way," Went on the Man Who Had, "But there are three or four things to be observed by all of them. In the first place one must be very hard-working."

"And one must never lose sight of the object worked for. Not"—as if he had followed the boy's inward drop of dismay—"that a man should think of nothing but getting money. On the contrary, I consider it very essential for a man to have some escape from his business, some change of pasture to run his mind in. He comes fresher to his work so. What I mean is that when he works he must make every stroke count toward the end he has in view. Do you understand?"

"Yes." said Peter.

"I think so." The House and the Shining Walls were safe, at any rate.
"AND THEN," Mr. DASSONVILLE CHECKED OFF THE POINTS ON HIS FINGERS, "HE
MUST ALWAY'S SAVE SOMETHING FROM HIS INCOME. NO MATTER HOW SWALL IT

MUST ALWAY'S SAVE SOMETHING FROM HIS INCOME, NO MATTER HOW SMALL IT is."

"I TRY TO DO THAT." CONFESSED PETER: "BUT WHAT WITH ELLEN'S BACK BEING

bad, and the interest on the mortgage, it's not so easy."

"Is THERE A MORTGAGE? I AM SORRY FOR THAT, FOR THE NEXT THINS I WAS COING to say is that he must never go into debt, never on any account."

"My father was sick; it was an accident," Peter protested loyally.

"So! I THINK I REMEMBER. WELL, IT IS UNFORTUNATE, BUT WHERE THERE IS A

DEBT THE ONLY THING IS TO REDUCE IT AS STEADILY AS POSSIBLE, AND IF THIS

MORTGAGE TEACHES YOU THE TRICK OF SAVING IT MAY NOT BE SUCH A BAD

thing for you. But when a man works and saves for a long time without

working are not worth while. You must never make that mistake."

"OH, NO," SAID PETER. IT SEEMED TO HIM THAT THEY WERE GETTING ON VERY well indeed.

GETTING ANY SENSIBLE BENEFIT, HE SOMETIMES THINKS THAT SAVING AND

"BUT I AM NOT SURE I CAN PUT IT PLAINLY. IT IS THAT YOU MUST NOT TRY TO BE TOO WISE" HE SMI ED A LITTI E TO PETER'S BLANKNESS. "I BELIEVE IN HARMONY IT. IS CALLED LOOKING ON ALL SIDES OF A THING, BUT THERE IS ALWAYS ONE SIDE OF EVERYTHING LIKE THE MOON WHICH IS TURNED FROM US. YOU MUST JUST start from where you are and keep moving." "I SEE," SAID PETER, LOOKING THOUGHTFULLY INTO THE FIRE, IN IMTATION OF MR. Dassonville. And there being no more advice forthcoming he began TO WONDER IF HE OUGHT TO SIT A WHILE FROM POLITENESS. AS PEOPLE DID IN

"There is another thing I should like to say," Mr. Dassonville went on,

BLOOMBURY, OR GO AT ONCE, MRS. DASSONVILLE GOT UP AND CAME BEHIND her husband's chair "DON'T YOU THINK YOU OUGHT TO TELL HIM. DAVID. THAT THERE ARE OTHER things worth having besides money; better worth?"

"YOU, PERHAPS." MR. DASSONVILLE TOOK THE HAND OF HIS WIFE LAID ON HIS SHOULDER AND HELD IT AGAINST HIS CHEEK: IT BROUGHT OUT FOR PETER SUDDENLY. HOW MANY YEARS YOUNGER SHE WAS. AND WHAT HE HAD HEARD

OF MR. DASSONVILLE HAVING MARRIED HER FROM AMONG THE SUMMER FOLK WHO CAME TO HARWONY FOR THE PINE WOODS AND THE SEA AIR. "AH, BUT I'M NOT SURE I'D HAVE YOU WITHOUT A GREAT DEAL OF IT. IT TAKES MONEY TO RAISE RARE PLANTS LIKE YOU. BUT I OUGHT TO SAY." STILL HOLDING HIS WIFE'S HAND TO HIS CHEEK AND WATCHING PETER ACROSS IT, "THAT I THINK IT IS A

VERY GOOD SIGN THAT YOU ARE WILLING TO ASK. THE MOST OF POOR MEN WILL SIT ABOUT AND RAIL AND BWY THE RICH. BUT HARDLY ONE WOULD THINK TO ASK HOW IT IS DONE. OR BELIEVE IF HE WERE TOLD. THEY'VE A NOTION IT'S ALL GOUGING AND LUCK, AND YOU COULDN'T BEAT THAT OUT OF THEM IF YOU TRIED. VERY FEW OF THEM UNDERSTAND HOW SIMPLE SUCCESS IS: IT ISN'T EASY

often, but it is always simple."

PETER SUPPOSED THAT HE REALLY OUGHT TO GO AFTER THAT, THOUGH HE DID NOT KNOW HOW TO MANAGE IT UNTIL MRS. DASSONVILLE SMILED AT HIM OVER HER

HUSBAND'S SHOULDER AND ASKED HIM WHAT SORT OF WORK HE DID. "OH. IF

YOU KNOW ABOUT GARDENS." SHE INTERRUPTED HIM. "YOU CAN HELP A LITTLE. THERE ARE SUCH A LOT OF THINGS COMING UP IN MINE THAT I DON'T KNOW THE

names of " IT FLASHED OUT TO PETER LONG AFTERWARD THAT SHE HAD SIMPLY PROVIDED AN EASY WAY FOR HIM TO GET OUT OF THE HOUSE NOW THAT HIS VISIT WAS TERMINATED SHE HELD THE WHITE FOLD OF HER SHAWL OVER HER HEAD WITH ONE HAND AND GATHERED THE TRAILING SKIRTS WITH THE OTHER. THEY RUSTLED AS SHE MOVED LIKE THE LEAVES OF THE ELMS AT NIGHT ABOVE THE ROOF. AS SHE LED HIM ALONG THE WALK WHERE LITTLE STRAIGHT SPEARS OF GREEN AND BILINT FLOWER OROWAS FAINTLY TINGED WITH COLOUR CAME UP THICKLY IN THE BORDERS. SO BY DEGREES SHE GOT HIM DOWN PAST THE HYACINTH BEDS AND THE NODDING BLIDS OF THE DAFFODILS TO THE GATE AND ON THE ROAD AGAIN. WALKING HOME IN THE CHILL EARLY TWILIGHT WITH THE PRICKING OF A pleasant excitement in his veins. IT WAS THAT, PERHAPS, AND THE SENSE OF HAVING GOT SO MUCH MORE OUT OF IT THAN ANY ACCOUNT OF HIS VISIT WOULD JUSTIFY. THAT KEPT PETER FROM SAYING MUCH TO HIS MOTHER THAT NIGHT ABOUT HIS TALK WITH THE RICH MAN: he asked her instead if she had ever seen Mrs. Dassonville "YES." SHE ASSURED HIM. "MR. DASSONVILLE DROVE HER OVER TO MRS. TILLINGHURST'S FUNERAL IN OCTOBER THEY HAD ONLY BEEN MARRIED A LITTLE WHILE THEN; SHE IS THE SECOND MRS. DASSONVILLE, YOU KNOW; THE FIRST

died years ago. I thought her a very lovely lady."

"A LOVELY LADY," PETER SAD THE PHRASE UNDER HIS BREATH. THE SOUND OF it was like the soft drawing of silken skirts.

HIS MOTHER LOCKED AT HIM ACROSS THE SUPPER TABLE AND WAS PLEASED TO SEE THE RENEWAL OF CHERFULNESS, AND THEN, MOTHERLIKE, SICHED TO

THINK THAT PETER WAS GETTING SO OLD NOW THAT IF HE DIDN'T CHOOSE TO TELL
HER THINGS SHE HAD NO RIGHT TO ASK HM. "YOUR WALK HAS DONE YOU
GOOD." WAS ALL SHE SAID, AND IT MUST HAVE BEEN THE CASE, FOR THAT VERY

night as soon as his head had touched the pillow he was off again, as HE HADN'T BEEN SNOE ELLEN FELL ILL, TO THE HOUSE OF THE SHINNG WALLS. IT ROSE STATELY AGAINST A BLUR OF LEAFLESS WOODS AND CROOUS-COLOURED

SKY. THE GARDEN BEFORE IT WAS ALL FULL OF SPRING BULBS AND THE SCENT OF DAFFODILS. THE PRINCESS CAME WALKING IN IT AS BEFORE, BUT SHE WAS NO PRINCESS NOW, MERELY A WOMAN WITH HER DARK HAIR BRUSHED UP IN A HALF MOON FROM HER BROW AND HER SKIRTS DRAWING AFTER HER WITH A SILKEN RUSTLE; HER FACE WAS DIM AND SWEET, WITH ONLY A FAINT, A VERY FAINT, reminder of Ada, and her name was the Lovely Lady.

PART TWO

IN WHICH PETER BECOMES INVISIBLE ON THE WAY TO GROWING RICH

PART TWO

IN WHICH PETER BECOMES INVISIBLE ON

THE WAY TO GROWING RICH

IN THE LATE SUMMER OF THAT YEAR PETER WENT UP TO THE CITY WITH MR. GREBNSLET TO LAY IN HIS WINTER STOCK AND REMANDED IN CANNED GOODS WITH SECSE. BROTHERS' HOUSEHOLD EMPORIUM. THAT HIS MOTHER HAD RENTED THE FARMING LAND FOR CASH WAS THE MINEDIATE OCCASION OF HIS SETTING OUT, BUT THERE WERE SEVERAL OTHER REASONS AND A GREAT MANY OPINIONS. MR. GREENSLET HAD A BOY OF HIS OWN COMING ON FOR PETER'S PLACE, BET, THE MARE, HAD DIED, AND THE FARM IMPLEMENTS WANTED RENEWING; IN SHITE OF WHICH MIRS. WEATHERAL COULD HARDLY HAVE MADE UP HER IMPO TO SPARE HIM EXCEPT FOR THE OFFORTIONE AFFEARANCE OF THE CASH RENTER. WITH THAT AND THE CHOKENS AND THE SEWING, SHE AND ELLEN COULD TAKE CARE OF THEMSELVES AND THE NITEREST, WHICH WOULD LEAVE ALL THAT PETER TO UNITED THE OUT DAKE THE COULD TAKE THE OWNER.

THEY PUT IT HOPEFULLY TO ONE ANOTHER SO, AS THEY SAT ABOUT THE KITCHEN STOVE, ALL THREE OF THEM HOLDING HANDS, ON THE EVENING BEFORE HIS DEPARTURE. BUT THE OPINIONS, WHICH WERE RATHER THICKER AT BLOOMBURY THAN OPPORTUNITIES, WERE BY NO MEANS SO CONFIDENT AS PETER COULD HAVE WISHED IF HE HAD KNOWN THEM. MR. GREENSLET THOUGHT IT COULDN'T BE MUCH WORSE THAN PETER'S PRESENT STUATION, AND THE NEGHBOURS WERE SURE IT WASN'T MUCH BETTER. THE MINSTER HAD A GREAT DEAL TO SAY OF THE TEMPIRATIONS OF A YOUNG MAN IN THE CITY, WHICH WAS AFTERWARD INVALIDATED BY THE CITY'S TURNING OUT QUITE ANOTHER PLACE THAN HE described it.

IT WAS LEFT FOR ELLEN AND MRS. JM HARVEY TO MAKE THE HAPPY prognostication. "You can trust Peter," Ada was confident.

"BUT YOU GOT TO BE MIGHTY CUTE TO GET IN WITH THOSE CITY FELLOWS," HER HUSBAND WARNED HER, "AND PETER'S SO DASHED SIMPLE, NEVER SEES ANYTHING EXCEPT WHAT'S RICHT IN FRONT OF HIM. NOW A MAN"—JIM ASSUMED THIS ESTATE FOR HIMSELF IN THE RICHT OF BEING THREE MONTHS married—"has got to look on all sides of a thing."

AS FOR ELLEN, SHE HADN'T THE SUGHTEST DOUBT. THAT PETER WAS SHORTLY TO BECOME IMMENSELY WEALTHY AND SHE WAS TO GO UP AND KEEP HOUSE for him.

"THERE'LL BE GOLD CHAIRS IN THE RAPLOUR AND REAL BRUSSELS," SHE ANTIORATED. PETER AFFECTIED TO THINK IT UNLIKELY THAT SHE COULD BE

SPARED BY THE HIGHLY MYTHICAL PERSON WHO WAS TO CARRY HER OFF TO KEEP HOUSE FOR HIMSELF. SOMEHOW PETER COULD NEVER FALL INTO THE NORMAL BLOOMBURY ATTITUDE OF THINKING THAT IF YOU HAD HIP DISEASE, YOUR LIFE WAS BOUND TO BE DIFFERENT FROM EVERYBOOD'S AND YOU MIGHT AS WELL SAY SO right out, flat-footed, and be done with it.

WITH ALL THIS, FINALLY HE WAS GOT OFF TO THE CITY IN THE WAKE OF MR. GREENSLET, AND THE FIRST DISCOVERY HE MADE THERE WAS THAT OUTSIDE OF

GREENSLET, AND THE FIRST DISCOVERY HE MADE THERE WAS THAT OUTSIDE OF SECEL BROTHERS, AND A COLLARLESS MAN WITH A DISCOURAGED MOUSTACHE WHO APPEARED IN THE HALL OF HIS LODGING-HOUSE WHEN THE RENT WAS DUE, HE WAS PRACTICALLY INVISIBLE AS HE WENT UP AND DOWN THE STARS SCODEN WITH SCALLS WATER WHICH NEVER BY ANY POSSIBLE CHANCE LETT THEM SCRUBBED, NOBODY SPOKE TO HIM. NOBODY IN THE STREET SAW HIM WALKING TO AND FRO IN HIS YOUNG LONGLINESS. THERE WERE MEN PASSING

WALKING TO AND FRO IN HIS YOUNG LONELINESS. THERE WERE MEN PASSING THERE WITH FACES LIKE MR. DASSON/LLE'S, KEEN AND COMPETENT, AND LOVELY LADIES IN SOFT BECOMING WRAPS AND BRIGHT WINGED HATS—SUCH HATS! PETER WOULD LIKE TO HAVE HALLED SOME OF THESE AS ONE IMMEASURABLY BEHIND BUT STILL IN THE WAY, SEZED OF THAT PRECIOUS INWARD QUALITY WHICH MANIFESTS ITSELF IN COMPETENCY AND BRIGHTNESS. HE WOULD HAVE LIKED TO FEEL THEM LOOKING ON PRENDULLY AT HIS BUSINESS OF BECOMING ROH, BUT HE REMAINED, AS FAR AS ANY WORD FROM THEM WAS CONDERNED, COMPLETELY INVISIBLE. HE CAME AFTER A WHILE TO THE

CONCLUSION THAT MOST OF THOSE WHO WENT UP AND DOWN WITH HIM WERE IN

the same unregarded condition.

THEM CAME AND WENT LINCONFRONTED BETWEEN BANKED WINDOWS OF WARMTH AND LOVELINESS, PAST DOORS FROM WHICH LIGHT AND MUSIC OVERFLOWED INTO THE DIM STREET IN SPLASHES OF COLOUR AND SOUND, WHERE PEOPLE EQUALLY UNDER THE PROHBITION LAPPED THEM UP HUNGRLY LIKE

THE CITY APPEARED QUITE HABITUATED TO THIS STATE OF AFFAIRS; HORDES OF

DOGS AT PUDDLES. SOMETIMES IN THE STREET CARS OR SURWAYS HE BRIGHED AGAINST FAIR CIRLS FROM WHOM THE DELICATE AROMA OF personality was like a waft out of that country of which his preferences AND APPRECIATIONS ACKNOWLEDGED HIM A NATIVE. BUT NO SMALLEST FLUTTER

OF KINSHIP EVER PUT FORTH FROM THEM TO PETER. THE PLACE WAS CRAMMED FULL OF EVERYTHING THAT ANYBODY COULD WANT AND NOBODY COULD GET AT IT. AT LEAST NOT PETER, NOR ANYBODY HE KNEW AT SIEGEL BROTHERS. AND AT THE LODGING HOUSE THEY SEEMED NEVER TO HAVE HEARD OF THE UNDIMINISHED HEAPS OF SPLENDOUR THAT LAY PILED BEHIND PLATE GLASS AND POLISHED COUNTERS. IT WAS EXTRAORDINARY, INCREDIBLE, THAT HE WASN'T to have the least of them.

As the winter closed in on him. The restrictions of dally living rose so THICK LIPON HIM THAT THEY BEGAN TO PREVIOUT HIM FROM HIS DREAMS. HE COULD NO LONGER GET THROUGH THEM TO THE HOUSE WITH THE SHINING WALLS. OFTEN AS HE LAY IN HIS BED TRYING TO BELIEVE HE WAS WARM ENOUGH. HE WOULD SET OFF FOR IT DOWN THE LANES OF BLINDING CITY LIGHT THROUGH WHICH THE SCREAM OF THE TROLLEY PURSUED HIM, ONLY TO SEE IT GLIMMER PALELY ON HIM THROUGH IMPENETRABLE PLATE GLASS, OR DEFENDED FROM HIM BY HUGE

trespass signs that appeared to have some relation to the fact that he

was not yet so rich as he expected to be. Times when he would wake OUT OF HIS SLEEP. IT WOULD BE TO A STRANGE SENSE OF SEVERANCES AND LOSS. AND THOUGH HE DID NOT KNOW EXACTLY WHAT AILED HIM. IT WAS THE LOSS OF ALL HIS DREAMS. AFTER A WHILE THE WHOLE CITY SEEMED TO ACHE WITH THAT LOSS. HE WOULD LIE IN HIS NARROW BED AND THINK THAT IF HE DID not see his mother and Bloombury again he would probably die of it.

THEN ALONG IN THE BEGINNING OF APRIL SOMEBODY SAW HIM. IT WAS IN THE DUSK BETWEEN SUPPER AND BED TIME. WALKING ON THE VIADUCT WHERE HE HAD THE PARK BELOW HIM. THERE WAS A WASH OF BLUE STILL IN THE SKY AND A THIN BLADE OF A MOON TINGING IT WITH CTRON: HERE AND THERE THE LIGHT CLITTERED ON THE TRICKLE OF SAP ON THE CHAPED BOUGHS. IT WAS JUST HERE THAT HE MET HER. SHE WAS ABOUT HIS OWN AGE, AND SHE WAS WALKING ODDLY, AS THOUGH UNCONSCIOUS OF THE CITY ALL ABOUT HER, WITH SHORT PICKED STEPS. AND HER HAT WITH THE TILT TO IT OF A GIRL WHO KNOWS HERSELF ADMRED. SHE HAD A ROSE AT HER BREAST WHICH SHE STRAIGHTENED NOW AND THEN, OR SMOOTHED A FOLD OF HER DRESS AND HUMMED AS SHE WALKED. HER CHEEKS WERE BRIGHT EVEN IN THE DUSK, AND SOME STRANGE. QUICK FEAR KEPT PACE WITH HER GLANCING. PETER WAS WALKING HEAVILY HIMSELF, AS THE YOUNG DO WHEN THE DREAMS HAVE GONE OUT OF THEM, AND AS THEY PASSED IN THE LIGHT OF THE ARC THAT DANCED DELICATELY TO THE WANDERING AIR. THE GIRL'S LOOK SKIMMED HIM LIKE A SWALLOW. SHE MUST HAVE TURNED JUST BEHIND HIM. FOR IN A MOMENT SHE DRIFTED PAST HIS shoulder. "Hello!" she said

"Hello!" SAID PETER, BUT, IN THE MOMENT IT HAD TAKEN TO DRAG THAT UP FROM UNDER HIS ASTONISHMENT. SHE HAD PASSED HIM: HER LAUGH AS SHE

WENT BRUSHED THE TIP OF HIS YOUTH LIKE A SWALLOW'S WING. IT REMAINED WITH HIM AS A LITTLE. FAR SPARK: IT SEEVED AS IF A DREAM WAS ABOUT TO SPIN ITSELF OUT FROM IT. HE WENT AROUND THAT WAY SEVERAL TIMES ON HIS evening walks in hopes that he might meet her again. As though the spark had lightened a little of the blank unrecognition WITH WHICH THE CITY MET HIM. HE WAS SEEN THAT DAY AND IN NO UNFRIENDLY ASPECT BY "OUR MR. CROKER" OF SIEGEL BROTHERS. THE RUNNING GEAR OF A GREAT CONCERN LIKE THE HOUSEHOLD EMPORIUM PRESSED, IN THE DAYS OF PETER'S APPRENTICESHIP, UNEQUALLY AT TIMES ON ITS EMPLOYEES, AND THE GALLED SPOT OF THE CANNED GOODS DEPARTMENT WAS BLINDERS THE BLINDLE BOY HIS OTHER NAME WAS HORACE AND HE WAS CHIEFLY REMARKABLE FOR PIMPLES WHICH HE SEEMED TO THINK INTERESTING. AND FOR A STATE OF ACTIVE RESENTMENT AGAINST ANYBODY WHO GAVE HIM ANYTHING TO DO. THE WORLD FOR HORACE WAS A DARK JUNGLE FULL OF GROUCHES AND PULLS AND privilege and devious guile.

MR. CROKER," HORACE DEPENDED HIMSELF, PREPARING TO SNIVEL IF THE COCASION SEEMED TO DEWAND IT, BY TAKING OUT HIS GUM AND STOKING IT ON the inside of his sleeve. "I can't handle 'em no faster, Mr. Croker."

"NOT THE WAY YOU GO AT IT," PETER ASSURED HIM. ANYBODY COULD HAVE TOOLD BY THE WAY HE INCLUDED MR. CROKER IN HIS OHERFULNESS THAT THERE WAS SOMETHING BETWEEN THEM. "YOU TURN 'EM OVER TOO MANY TIMES AND YOU USE TOO MUCH PAPER AND TOO MUCH STRING." SUDDBLY PETER REDDENED WITH BYBARRASSIVENT. "NOT THAT THAT MAKES ANY DIFFTENCE TO A BIG FRIM LIKE THIS," HE APOLOGIZED, "BUT IN A SWALL PLACE EVERY LITTLE COUNTS." HE TURNED THE PACKAGE DEFILY AND BEGAN TO ILLUSTRATE HIS METHOD. "WHEN YOU'RE TYING UP CALLOO WITH ONE HAND AND TAKING IN EGGS AND BUTTER WITH THE OTHER AND TELLING THREE PEOPLE THE PRICE OF THINGS AT THE SAME TIME." HE DIPLAND. "YOU HAVE TO NOTICE THINGS LIKE

"Aw, what's the matter with the way I was doin' it?" wailed Horace.
"IF YOU DON'T FEEL QUITE UP TO IT——" MR. CROKER HINTED. HORACE DID, HE wrapped with alacrity and Peter showed him how to hold the string.
"YOU COME ALONG WITH ME, WEATHERAL," MR. CROKER COMMANDED.
HORACE TOOK HIS QUIT OF HIS QUIF AND MADE DARK PROGNOSTICATION

"I see." said Mr. Croker. "You try it. Blinders."

THAT THE PROPENSITY WHICH PETER HAD DEVELOPED FOR INQUIRING EVERY HALF HOUR OR SO IF HE HADN'T GOT THAT DONE YET, COULD BE NOTHING ELSE BUT A CABAL DIRECTED AGAINST BLINDERS' FOUR DOLLARS AND A HALF A WEEK, HE WAS CONVINCED. IN ALL THE TIME THAT HE COULD SPARSE FROM HIS PIMPLES, HORACE REHEARSED A MARTYR'S AIR DESIGNED TO CONVEY TO MR. CROKER THAT THOUGH HE WOULD SUPPER IN SLENCE HE WAS NONE THE LESS SUPPERING. TO BEING PRECISELY MR. CROKER'S BUSINESS TO RAP OUT GROUCHES AS AN EXPERT MECHANICIAN TARS DEPECTIVE COSS, IT HAPPENED THE DAY AFTER PETER'S MEETING WITH THE GIRL. THAT THE WORST HOPES OF HORACE WERE

"AW. THEY'RE ALWAYS A PICKIN' ON ME. MR. CROKER. THAT'S WHAT THEY ARE.

realized.

this."

WHAT PETER THOUGHT WAS THAT HE SHOULD PROBABLY BECOME VERY unpopular with his fellow clerks. Croker took him across to dry goods, WHERE GIRLS WERE TYING BUNDLES IN LITTLE CAGES OVER THE SALES LADIES' HEADS, AND HAD HIM REPEAT THE METHOD OF HANDLING STRING. EXCEPT THAT HE THOUGHT HE SHOULD GET TO LIKE MR. CROKER. THE INCIDENT MADE NO PARTICULAR IMPRESSION ON PETER—SO DULLED WERE ALL HIS SENSES FOR want of dreams.—and passed wholly out of mind. IT WAS TWO OR THREE DAYS AFTER THAT HE SAW THE GIRL AGAIN, NEARER THE BND OF THE VIADUCT. WHERE FOUR OR FIVE STREETS POURED LIGHT AND

as to what was probably to be done to Peter.

CONFUSION INTO VENABLE SQUARE. SHE WAS GOING ON AHEAD, HURRYING and pretending not to hurry to overtake a Man to WHOM SHE WISHED TO SPEAK, SHE WAS QUITE CLOSE TO HIM, SHE WAS SPEAKING, AND SUDDENLY HE GAVE A LITTLE OUTWARD JERK WITH HIS ELBOW WHICH CAUGHT HERS UNEXPECTEDLY AND WHRLED HER BACK AGAINST THE PARAPET. THE LITTLE PURSE SHE WAS CARRYING FELL FROM HER HAND. THE MAN GAVE A CLUCK laugh over his shoulder and ploughed his way across the street.

"The skilky!" Peter's list of expletives was not extensive. He poxed

UP THE FLAT LITTLE PURSE AND HANDED IT BACK TO HER. "SHALL I GO AFTER HM? Did vou know him?" THE GIRL WAS HOLDING ON TO THE PARAPET WITH A LITTLE CHOKY LAUGH. "OH. yes, I know that kind. No, I don't want him!" "He ought to have a good thrashing." Peter was convinced. The girl looked up at him with a sudden curiosity.

"YOU'RE FROM THE COUNTRY, AIN'T YOU? I THOUGHT SO THE OTHER NIGHT. I CAN alwavs tell."

"I guess you're from the country yourself." Peter Hazarded. She was PRETTIER EVEN THAN HE HAD THOUGHT. HER GLANCE HAD LEFT HS. HOWEVER. AND WAS ROVING UP AND DOWN THE HURRYING CROWD AS THOUGH TESTING IT.

for some plunge she was about to make.

"I GUESS YOU'RE REAL KIND." SHE ADMITTED. "BUT I AIN'T GOIN' HOME JUST. YET, I GOT A DATE." SHE MOVED OFF THEN, AND SINCE IT WAS IN THE DIRECTION HE WAS GOING. THERE WAS NOTHING FOR PETER TO DO BUT MOVE WITH HER. ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THE WIDE PAVENENT. AT THE TURN SHE DRIFTED BACK TO HIS SIDE AGAIN: IT SEEMED TO PETER THERE WAS amusement in her tone. "YOU GOT ANYTHING TO DO SATURDAY ABOUT THIS TIME?" PETER HADN'T. "Well, I'll be here—savvy?" But before he could make her any assurance she laughed again and slipped into the crowd. PETER KNEW A GREAT MANY FACTS ABOUT LIFE. THERE WERE HUMAN FAILINGS EVEN IN BLOOMBURY, AND WHAT PETER DIDN'T KNOW ABOUT THE CITY HAD BEEN LARGELY MADE UP TO HIM BY THE CHOICE CONVERSATION OF J. WILKINSON COHN, IN STAPLES, AT THE NEXT COUNTER TO HIM, ANYBODY WHO LISTENED LONG ENOUGH TO J. WILKINSON'S PERSONAL REMINSCENCES WOULD HAVE FOUND HIMSELE BULLY INSTRUCTED FOR EVERY POSSIBLE CONTINGENCY

"IF YOU WANTED ME TO SEE YOU HOME-" PETER HINTED; HE DID NOT KNOW OUTE WHAT WAS EXPECTED OF HM. SHE ANSWERED WITH A LITTLE

sharp noise which ended in a cough.

LIKELY TO ARISE BETWEEN A GENTLEWAN OF UNDOUBTED ATTRACTIONS AND THE ladies, but there are forces in youth that are stronger than experience. IT IS A VERY OLD. OLD WAY OF THE WORLD FOR YOUNG THINGS TO WALK ABROAD IN the spring and meet one another.

PETER STROUGH ALONG THE VIADLICT SATURDAY AND FELT HIS YOUTH BEAT IN

HIM PLEASANTLY WHEN HE SAW HER COME. SHE HAD ON A DIFFERENT HAT, AND THE FARLIER HOUR SHOWED HIM THE SHINING OF HER EYES ABOVE THE raddled cheeks. "WE COULD GO DOWN IN THE PARK A PIECE" HE SUGGESTED AS THEY TURNED

IN TOGETHER ALONG THE PARAPET. THERE WAS A DELICATE DAMP SMELL

coming up from it on the night, like the Bloombury lanes.

"YOU'RE REGULAR COUNTRY, AREN'T YOU?" THERE WAS AN ACCENT OF impatience in her tone, "I haven't had my supper yet."

PETER HAD PLANNED THIS MAGNIFICENCE AS HE CAME ALONG FINGERING

HS
PAY BAVELOPE. HE KNEW JUST THE PLACE, HE TOLD HER. THE FEELING OF HIS
PROPER MALE ASCENDENCY AS HE DREW HER THROUGH THE CROWD WAS A
TONC TO HIM, THE MAN TOSSING PANCAKES IN THE WINDOW WHERE HE
HESITATED LOCKING FOR THE LADIES' BYTRANCE SEEMED QUITE TO BYJOY
doing it, as though he had known all along there was to be company.

"OH, I DON'T CARE FOR ANY OF THESE PLACES." PETER FIELT HER PLLL AT HS
BLBOW. "I'LL SHOW YOU." THEY WHIT ALONG THEN, BRUSHING LIGHTLY SHOULDER
to shoulder until they came to one of those revolving doors from which
GUSTS OF MUSIC ISSUED. THERE WAS A GIRL STANDING UP TO SING AS THEY
SAT DOWN AND THE WHOLE AR OF THE PLACE WAS BRYOND BYEN THE RETAILED.

"Well, what do you say to a piece of roast beet and a cup of coffee?"

SALDOWN AND HE VIPLLE AR OF HE PLACE WAS BOOK HER WRAFS AND BEGAN to order freely. Wilkinson. The GRI THREW BACK HER WRAFS AND BEGAN to order freely. Peter, who had a glimpse of the card, stiffened.

"I—I GLESS I'M NOT SO VERY HUNGRY," HE CAUTIONED. SHE LOCKED UP FROM THE MENU SHARRLY AND HER FACE SOFTENED; SHE MADE ONE OR TWO DEFT changes in it.

"THIS IS DUTCH, YOU KNOW," SHE THREW OUT. "OH, I KNOW YOU INVITED ME, BUT YOU DIDN'T THINK I WAS ONE OF THE KIND THAT LET A STRANGE GENTLEMAN PAY FOR MY DINNER, DID YOU?" PETER DENED IT, STRICKEN WITH ENBARRASSMENT. SHE SEEMED IN THE LIGHT, TO TAKE HIM IN MORE

"Say, would you have licked that fellow the other night, honest?"
"Well, if he was disrespectful to a lady——" Peter began.

completely.

"Well, if he was disrespectful to a lady——" Peter began. "Oh. ex*cus*e mel" She Turned her head aside for a moment in her

"OH, excuse me!" She turned her head aside for a moment in her Long gloves. "You *ar*e country!" she said again, but it seemed not to displease her. "I don't care so much for her voice do you?" She

TURNED ON THE SINGER. THEY DISCUSSED THE ENTERTAINMENT AND THE
DINNER. THEY WERE A LONG TIME ABOUT IT. THE ORCHESTRA PLAYED A WALTZ
AT LAST, AND ETHEL—SHE HAD TOLD HIM TO CALL HER THAT—PUT HER ARMS ON

THE TABLE AND LEANED ACROSS TO HIM. AND THOUGH PETER KNEW BY THIS

"What's it like up in the country where you lived?" she wished to

time that her cheeks were painted, he didn't somehow mind it.

know.

"Hills mostly, little wooded ones, and high pastures, and the apple

"I KNOW," SHE NODDED. "I GUESS IT'S THEM I BEEN SMELLING ... OR lavlocks."

orchards going right up over them...."

"I quess it is."

"THINGS COMING UP IN THE GARDEN," PETER CONTRIBUTED: "PEONIES, AND LONG ROWS OF DAFFOOLS....." HE DID NOT REALIZE IT, BUT HE HAD DESCRIBED TO HER NO PLACE THAT HE HAD KNOWN BUT THE WAY TO THE HOUSE. THE GIRL CUIT him off

"DON'T!" SHE SAID SHARRLY. "YOU KNOW." SHE HALF APOLOGIZED. "YOU KIND

OF REMIND ME OF SOMEBODY ... A BOY I KNEW UP COUNTRY. IT WAS HIM THAT GOT ME HERE.——" SHE MADE HER LITTLE ADMISSION QUELLY, THE HORROR OF IT LONG WORN DOWN TO DAILY HABIT. "E HAT FRIST TIME I SAW YOU, IT SEEMED ALMOST AS IF IT WAS HIM ... I AN'T NEVER BLANED HIM—MUCH. HE DIDN'T MEAN TO BE BAD, BUT WHEN THE TROUBLE CAME HE COULDN'T HELP NOME.... I guess real help is about the hardest thing to find there is."

"Oh, well, we gotta make the best of it." She glanced at Peter with her HEAD ON ONE SIDE AS SHE TWIDDLED HER FINGERS ACROSS THE CLOTH TO THE tune of the prophestra.

THEN ON ONE SIDE AS SHE WIDDED HEN HINGERS ACROSS THE CLOTH TO THE tune of the orchestra.

THEY WENT OUT AT LAST AND WALKED IN THE LEAST PREQUENTED STREETS, AND

PETER HELD HER HAND; THE WARMTH OF IT RAN WITH A PLEASANT TINGLING IN HIS VEINS. HE SEEMED TO HAVE TOUCHED IN HER PALM THE POINT AT WHICH THE CITY CAME ALIVE TO HIM. THEY WALKED AND WALKED AND YET IT SEEMED THAT SOMETHING LACKED TO BRING THE EVENING TO A RINSH, IT WAS

NOREDBLE TO PETER THAT AFTER ALL HIS LONGLINESS HE SHOULD HAVE TO LET her go.

hadn't suspected that she had been guiding him.
"I cuess not to-nort." Peter's blood was snong in his ears. In the DARK OF the UNFREQUENTED STREET HE COULD FEEL HER YOUNG BODY LEANING toward his.

"We could go up to My Place" Ethel suggested. "It's up here." He

"SAY, YOU KNOW I AIN'T AFTER THE MONEY THE WAY SOME GIRLS ARE, I LIKE you ... honest-----"

"I GUESS I'D BETTER GO HOME." BUT THEY WENT ON UP THE SIDE STREET A little farther. "Good-bye," he said, but he did not let her go.

She shook her hand free at last.

"OH, WELL, OF COURSE, IF YOU DON'T WANT TO...." HE FELT HER SOFT HANDS FUMBLING AT HIS FACE, SHE DREW HIM DOWN TO A KISS. SUDDENLY SHE sprang away, laughing. "Go, you silly!"

"ETHEL!" HE ORIED, BUT HE LOST HER IN THE DARK. HE SHOULD HAVE LET HER GO AT THAT, HE KNEW HE SHOULD. IN SMITE OF HER RAYING HALF, HIS DINNER HAD COST HIM MORE THAN TWO ORDINARY DINNERS ... AND BESIDES.... HE COLLIN'T HELP, HOWEVER, WALKING AROUND BY THE VIADUCT FOR SEVERAL EVENINGS THE NEXT WEEK. AND AT LAST HE SAW HER. SHE WAS GOING BY

"Ethel!"
She pretended just to have recognized him.

without speaking, but he got squarely in front of her.

one pretended just to have recognized nim.

know how to express the quality of his desertion.

"Oh, you here? I thought you'd gone back to the country!"
"YOU AREN'T MAD WITH ME ABOUT ... THE OTHER NIGHT?" HE DID NOT QUITE

"Who? ME?" ARLY. "OH, I GUESS THERE'S JUST AS GOOD FISH IN THE SEA
——" SHE CHANGED ALL AT ONCE UNDER HIS YOUNG HUNGER FOR

companionship. "You're good," she said; "you're the real thing."

"You're good, too," he was certain, "when you're with me."

"OH, IT RUBS OFF. SAY, KID, I GUESS YOU GOT FOLKS AT HOME YOU'RE SENDING MONEY TO AND ALL THAT, AND YOU GOT TO GET AHEAD IN THE WORLD. WELL, YOU DON'T WANT TO HAVE NOTHING TO DO WITH MY KIND, AND THAT'S STRAIGHT." THE DEVILTRY SHE RUT ON TOWARD HIM FALLED RITIRULLY. "CHASE YOURSELF, KID; I JUST AN'T GOOD FOR YOU ANY MORE." NEVERTH-BLESS THEY MOVED ALONG THE FARRAPET TO THE DARK INTERVAL BETWEEN THE LIGHTS AND THERE THEY KISSED again, this time with no undercurrent.

"Good-bye, Ethel."

"Good-bye, boy." The little spark was out.

PART THREE

IN WHICH PETER BECOMES A BACHELOR

PART THREE

IN WHICH PETER BECOMES A BACHELOR

THE DAY BEFORE LEAVING FOR HIS SUMMER VACATION PETER WAS NOTIFIED THAT HE WAS WANTED IN HIS PRIVATE OFFICE BY THE YOUNGER SIEGEL BROTHER. THOUGH HE COULDN'T QUITE FALL IN WITH THE DARK PROCONDICATIONS OF BLINDERS THAT HE WAS ABOUT TO BE MULCITED OF HIS SALARY BY A FLOT WHICH HAD BEEN FLAINLY INDICATED BY THE MARKED PARTIALITY OF OUR MIR. CROKER, THE NODENIT GAVE HIM SOME UNEASINESS. THE YOUNG SIEGEL. BROTHER MUST HAVE BEEN YOUNGER THAN SOMEBODY OF COURSE, THOUGH IT COULDN'T HAVE BEEN BY MORE THAN A SCRATCH, AND HE MIGHT HAVE BEEN ANY AGE WITHOUT BETRAYING IT, SO DEEPLY WAS HE SUNK IN THE EVIDENCE OF THE SURPASSING QUALITY OF THE GROCERY DEPARTMENT. HOWEVER, THERE WAS SOMETHING SURPRISINGLY YOUNG LOOKING OUT AT PETER.

brother's red and white rotundity, at which he took heart immensely.

"Weatheral, Peter, canned goods, recommended by Mr. Greenslet,"

Slege. Brother troked him off from a manula bivelore. "Just a little honorarium, Mr. Weatheral, we are in the habit of distributing to such of our biveloyees as make fractical suggestions to the advantage of the bisiness." Contriving to make his hands meet in front of him by clashing them viery high up on his offest, Slege. Brother assumed that he had folded his arms, and waited to see what Peter would do about it

"WE HAVE ALSO A LITTLE SAVINGS BANK FOR THE BENEFIT OF OUR BMPLOYEES WHICH PRYS 3 PER CENT., YET I BELIEVE WE HAVE YOU NOT AMONG OUR DEPOSITORS." THERE WAS THE SLIGHTEST POSSBLE BURR TO HIS SPEECH AS though it were blunted by so much fatness.

"WELL, YOU SEE, SR—THERE'S A MORTGAGE" PETER WAS AFRAID HE SHOULD damage himself by the admission, but the firm heard him out.

[&]quot;How much?"

honorarium.

"AND THE FARM, IT IS WORTH——" STEGEL BROTHER PARTED HIS HANDS slightly to admit of any valuation.

"Two thousand"

"It was a thousand, but we've got it down to seven hundred—six hundred and sixty," Peter corrected hinself with a glance at his

"SO! WELL, MR. WEATHERAL, THAT IS NOT SO BAD, AND IF I WERE YOU, WHEN I HAD COCASION TO SPEAK OF IT I WOULD SAY, NOT I AM PAYING A MORTGAGE,"
THAT IS DEAD WORK, MR. WEATHERAL, BUT I AM BUYING A FARM. IT GOES easier so."

"THANK YOU. SR. I'LL REMEMBER." HE SUPPOSED HIS BMPLOYER WAS DONE

with him, but as he turned to go he heard his name again.

"You wull report to our Mr. Croker when you return, Mr. Weatheral; he thinks he can use you."

Two weeks later when he came back rested from Bloombury, Peter

FOUND HINSELF VISIBLE TO AT LEAST TEN PERSONS, ALL OF WHOM PERTAINED TO THE BOARDING-HOUSE OF THE EXCLUSIVE MRS. BLOOGETT, WHERE, BY THE ADVICE OF J. WILKINSON COHN, HE BNIGAGED A SWALL ROOM ON THE THRO FLOOR WITH A WINDOW OPENING SOME SIX FEET FROM THE REAR WALL OF A WHOLESALE STATIONERY, AND ONE BLECTRIC LIGHT DISCREETLY PLACED TO discourage the habit of reading in bed.

FROM THIS TIME ON HE WAS VISIBLE TO MRS. BLOOGETT AND AGGIE AND

MISS THATO-ER, WHOM HE ALFRADY KNEW AS THE RUPE FOOD DEMONSTRATION IN DAIRY PRODUCTS, TO TWO INCONSIDERABLE YOUNG WOMEN FROM THE WHOLESALE STATIONER'S, AND A GENTLEWAN FROM A SHOE STORE, THE WHOLE OF WHOSE PHYSICONDMY AFFEARED TO BE COCUPIED WITH THE EFFORT TO EXPRESS AN BYGAGING YOUTH-LUNESS WHICH THE CROWN OF HIS HEAD EXPLICITLY DENED. HE WAS COCASIONALLY VISIBLE TO THE REPRESENTATIVE OF GENTLEWEN'S CUTIFITIERS WHO WAS ENCACED TO AGGIC AND TOOK SUNDAY

DINNERS WITH THEM, AND HE WAS PARTICULARLY AND PLEASINGLY VISIBLE TO J.

BOARDERS WERE SO MUCH OF A LIKENESS, A KIND OF FAMILY LIKENESS THAT SPREAD ALL OVER SECSE. BROTHERS AND SUCH PARTS OF THE CITY AS PETER HAD BEEN ADMITTED TO, THAT IT WAS A RELIEF TO PETER TO REALIZE FROM HIS PROFILE THAT J. WILKINSON'S LAST NAME PROBABLY OUGHT TO HAVE BEEN SPELLED COHEN. THE DETERMINEDLY YOUNG GENTLEMAN BYRLANED TO HIM THAT J. WILKINSON'S INTRUSION INTO THE EXCLUSIVENESS OF BLODGETT'S WAS LARGELY A CONCESSION TO AGGIE'S BEING AS GOOD AS MARRIED AND NOT LUBBLE TO SOCIAL CONTAMINATION, AND TO THE FACT THAT THE LITTLE JEW WAS amusing and pretty near white, anyway.

MISS MINNE HAVENS DID TYPENRITING AND STENOGRAPHY IN A DOWNTOWN OFFICE AND WAS UNDERSTOOD TO BE IN SEARCH OF BOONOMIC INDEPENDENCE, RATHER THAN UNDER THE NECESSITY OF MAKING A LIVING. SHE HAD A HIGH FLUFFY FOMPADOUR AND A HALF DISCOVERBILE SMILE WHICH COULD BE BROUGHT TO A VERY AGREEABLE LAUGH F ONE SPENT A LITTLE PAINS at it. J. WIlkinson Cohn appeared to find it worth the pains.

THE PARTIQULAR ADVANTAGE OF BLODGETT'S, BESIDES THE FACT THAT YOU

WILKINSON COHN AND MISS MINNE HAVENS. THE REST OF HIS FELLOW.

COULD BE BROUGHT TO A VERY AGREEABLE LAUGHT FOR STENT A LITTLE FAINS at it. J. Wilkinson Cohn appeared to find it worth the pains.

THE PARTICULAR ADVANTAGE OF BLODGETT'S, BESIDES THE FACT THAT YOU COULD HAVE TWO HELPS OF EVERYTHING WITHOUT PAYING EXTRA FOR IT, WAS THAT IT WAS EXCLUSIVE AND SOCIAL. MIRS. BLODGETT HAD COLLECTED HER FAINLY OF boarders on the principle of not having anybody who wasn't a suitable COMPANON FOR AGGIE. THERE WAS ALSO A PANOLA WHICH GAVE THE PLACE a tone.

There was fire and light in the dining-room at Blodgett's from seven to NINE ALWAYS, AND IN THE PARCUR WITH THE PANOLA ON SATURDAY EVENING AND ALL DAY SUNDAY. SOMETIMES, EVEN ON WIEK DAYS AFTER SUPPER, J. WILKINGON WOULD OPEN THE DOOR NITO THE DARKENED ROOM, RUSH AWAY

Wilkinson would open the door into the darkened room, fush away the panola and sing topical songs to his own accompaniment until his stiffened fingers clattered on the keys. Other times he would give

IMTATIONS OF POPULAR STAGE CELEBRITIES UNTIL BLODGETT'S SHOUTED WITH LAUGHTER. AT ALL TIMES THEY APPEARED TO HAVE A GREAT MANY engagements. Peter was advised to join this or that organization, and

TO ENTER UPON SOCIAL COCASIONS THAT UNFORTUNATELY PRESENTED THEMSELVES IN THE LIGHT OF COCASIONS TO SPEND MONEY. APPARENTLY

THAT SHE HAD ANYTHING AGAINST MISS THATCHER AND THE REST OF THEM—
THEY JUST DIDN'T HAVE THE SAME TASTES. SHE THOUGHT A PERSON OUGHT TO
SPEND SOME OF THE TIME IMPROVING THER MINDS. ALTHOUGH THE
EXPRESSION WAS AMBIGUOUS, IT SERVED AS A SORT OF SEDATIVE TO THE
ACHING VACUITY OF THE HOURS WHICH PETER SPENT AWAY FROM SIEGEL
BROTHERS. HE FOUND HIMSELF SPENDING AS MANY AS POSSIBLE OF THEM
WITH MISS HAVENS. SHE HAD A WAY OF MAKING THE PRIVOLING TALK OF THE
SLIPPER TABLE APPEAR A WARRANTIARI FS IRSTILL THE THINGS THAT PETER

THERE WERE NO DRAGONS TRACKING THE PATH OF BLOOGETI'S BOARDERS. MISS HAVENS DID BETTER THAN ANY OF THEM FOR HIM. SHE EXPLAINED TO HIM HOW TO GET BOOKS FROM THE CIRCULATING LIBRARY, AND LET HIM READ HERS UNTIL HE COULD ARRANGE FOR A CARD. SHE SAID IT WAS A FLEASURE TO THINK THERE WAS COING TO RESOMEROW. IN THE HOURS WHO WAS CONCENSAL. IT WASN'T

KNEW, EVEN WHILE HE ECHOED HER PHRASES, THAT HE WASN'T GETTING. HE
FOUND HINSELF SKIDDING ON THE PATHS OF SELF-IMPROVENENT AND THE
OBLIGATIONS OF SEEING LIFE, ALONG THE EDGES OF DESOLATION. HE
IMMERSED HINSELF AS FAR AS POSSIBLE IN THE ATMOSPHERE OF BLODGETT'S
NORDER THAT HE NEEDN'T HAVE ANY TIME LIETT IN WHICH TO CONSIDER HOW FAR
IT FELL SHORT OF WHAT HE HAD COME TO FIND. FOR THIS REASON HE WAS
USUALLY THE LAST AT THE SUPPER TABLE, BUT THERE WERE COCASIONS WHEN HE
found it discreed to slip away as early and quietly as possible.

IT WAS ONE EVENING ABOUT TWO MONTHS AFTER HIS INSTALMENT AT
BLODGETT'S. PETER WAS SITTING IN HIS ROOM WHEN HE HEARD THEM

vammering at his door with so much hilarious insistence that he found

HIMSELF GETTING UP TO OPEN IT, WITHOUT GIVING HIMSELF TIME TO PUT DOWN THE BOOK HE WAS READING OR TO TAKE OFF THE OVERCOAT HE HAD PUT ON FOR WANT OF A FIRE, AND FINDING HIMSELF IN SOME BYBARRASSMENT BECAUSE of the misapprehension which this fact involved.

"Ready, Peter?"

"Come along, Peter!"

"I ... I'm not going," said Peter.

"What? Not going to the rink with us to-night? Why, you said----"

"Don't be a beastly stiff!"

"I said I'd go if I could—" protested Peter, "and I can't."

like bees at the threshold of a hive.

"Gee! What's the matter with you?"

"COME ON FELLOWS, WE'LL MISS THE CAR. LET HIM BE A STIFF IF HE WANTS to "

THE BRIGHT GROUP OF HIS EFFLOW BOARDERS HUNG UPON THE NARROW LANDING

PETER HEARD THEIR FEET RETREATING ON THE STAIRS, AND THEN HE SAW THAT

MINNE HAVENS STILL HESITATED AT THE LANDING. SHE HAD ON HER BEST SILK WAIST AND HER BLOND POMPADOLIR WAS BRUSHED HIGHER THAN EVER. HER

EYES, WHICH WERE BLUE, WERE FIXED DIRECTLY ON HIM WITH SOMETHING IN

THE MEETING THAT GAVE HIM THE IMPRESSION, GASPINGLY, OF BEING ABOUT TO STEP OFF INTO SPACE. HE SEEMED SUDDENLY TO SEE A PATH OPENING

DRECTLY THROUGH THE SKATING RINK AND THE SATURDAY SOCIAL CLUB TO THE

HOUSE OF THE SHINING WALLS, AND MINNE HAVENS WALKING IN IT BESIDE HM. HE WRENCHED HIS MIND AWAY FORCIBLY FROM THAT AND FIXED IT ON THE figure of his weekly salary.

"Couldn't vou?" she persuaded.

"No," said Peter. "I'm much obliged to you, but I really couldn't."

BUT BEFORE HE HAD TIME TO TAKE UP HIS READING, WHICH SOMEHOW HE WAS NOT ABLE TO DO IMMEDIATELY. HE HEARD MRS. BLODGETT, WHO MADE A POINT OF BEING AS KIND TO HER BOARDERS AS SHE COULD AFFORD TO BE, tapping at his door.

"I thought you'd be going to the rink to-night."

"No." said Peter.

"You don't think it's wrong, or anything?"

"Oh. no. not in the least."

"Well. Mr. Weatheral, I've seen a power of young folks, comn' and GOIN'. IN MY BUSINESS AND IT DON'T PAY FOR 'EM TO GET TOO STODGY LIKE. THEY NEED LIVENIN' UP." SHE HUNG UPON THE DOOR AS PETER WATED FOR her to go. "Miss Havens is a nice girl." she ventured. PETER ADMITTED IT. "I'VE MY MOTHER AND SISTER TO THINK OF." HE TOLD HER. and presently he found he had told her a great deal more. "Well." COMMENTED Mrs. BLODGETT, "YOU DO HAVE A LOT TO CARRY.... WAS YOU READIN' NOW, M.R. WEATHERAL? ... BECAUSE IT'S WARMER DOWN IN MY SITTIN' ROOM, AND THERE'S ONLY AGGIE AND ME SEWIN'.... BESIDES." SHE argued triumphantly, "it's savin' light." FIRST AND LAST HE HEARD A GREAT DEAL ABOUT SAVING AT BLODGETT'S. AGGIE, WHO WAS MAKING UP HER WHITE THINGS, HAD SOMETHING TO TELL EVERY EVENING ALMOST, ABOUT THE PRICE OF INSERTION. BUT IT WAS SAVING FOR A PURPOSE. THEY WERE IN THE WAY, MOST OF THEM, OF BEING INVESTORS. J. Wilkinson had sixty dollars in his brother's digar stand on Fifty-FOURTH STREET. HE USED TO LET HIS BROTHER OFF FOR SUNDAY AFTERNOONS WITH OUTE A PROPRIETARY AIR. THE SHOE GENTLEWAN, WHOSE VERY JUVENILE NAME WAS WALLY WHITAKER, DIDN'T BELIEVE IN SUCH A MINCING AT PROSPERITY. HE TALKED FREELY ABOUT TIPS AND CORNERS AND MARGINS AND HAD BEEN KNOWN TO MAKE TWENTY-SEVEN DOLLARS IN COPPER ONCE. HE OFFERED PETER SOME EXCLUSIVE INSIDE INFORMATION IN B AND C'S BEFORE he had been in the house a month. "Well, you see." Peter explained himself, "I'm blying a farm up our WAY!" HIS FELLOW BOARDERS LAID DOWN THEIR FORKS TO LOOK AT HIM. HE COULD SEE REFLECTED FROM THEIR SEVERAL ANGLES HOW HE HAD PLACED HIMSELE BY THE MERE STATEMENT OF HIS SITUATION. HE FELT AT ONCE THE RESISTANCE IT GAVE HIM, THE SENSE OF SOMETHING TO PULL AGAINST, OF HAVING GOT HIS FEET LINDER HIM. IT WAS THE POINT AT WHICH THE CONCLEST.

OF THE MORTGAGE DRAGON BEGAN TO PRESENT ITSELF TO HIM AS A THING accomplished rather than a thing escaped. IT MUST HAVE BEEN THIS FEELING OF RELEASE WHICH OPENED UP FOR HIM.

FROM PICTURES THAT HE SAW OCCASIONALLY WITH MISS HAVENS ON SUNDAYS.

TO LEAD MORE OR LESS DIRECTLY TO THE HOUSE. THERE WERE TIMES WHEN HE FOUND HINSELF WALKING IN THEM WITH MISS. MINNE HAVENS, AND YET ALWAYS OUROUSLY EXPECTING THE LOVELY LADY WHEN THEY FOUND HER THERE, TO BE QUITE ANOTHER PERSON. HE CAME WITHIN AN INCH OF TELLING HER ABOUT IT ON THE COCASION ON WHICH SHE PRESSNITED HIM WITH AN EMBRODERED HAT MARKER FOR CHRISTIMAS, AND WHEN HE TOOK HER TO THE THEATRE WITH TOKETS THE BOOR WAI KER HAD PERSONITED TO HIM ON ACCOUNT.

OF MRS. FLOOR WALKER NOT FEELING UP TO IT. IT APPEARED, FURTHER, THAT MISS

FROM BOOKS HE READ AND DISCUSSED WITH HER. AVENUES THAT APPEARED.

HAVENS HAD A WAY OF FALLING INTO PROFOUND PSYCHOLOGICAL DIFFICULTIES WHICH REQUIRED A VAST AMOUNT OF TALKING OVER, AND A GREAT MANY APPEALS TO PETER'S DISINTERESTED JUDGMENT TO EXTRACT HER, NOT WITHOUT SOME SUBTLE INTIMATIONS OF DIZZYING ESCAPES FOR HINSELF. PETER SUPPOSED THAT WAS ALWAYS THE WAY WITH GRES. IT CAME TO A CRISS LATTER WHERE MISS HAVENS' WHOLE DESTINY HUNG UPON THE POINT AS TO WHETHER SHE COULD ACCEPT A SITUATION OFFERED HER IN HER OWN TOWN, OR SHOULD stay on in the city and see what came of it.

"YOU'D GET MORE SALARY THERE, AND BE ABLE TO LIVE CHEAPER?" PETER

WISHED TO KNOW.

"OH, YES." THE IMPLICATION OF HER TONE WAS THAT SHE DIDN'T SEE WHAT THAT HAD TO DO WITH IT. IT WAS TOWARD THE END OF JUNE, AND SHE WAS LOCKING VERY PRETTY IN A WHITE DRESS AND A HAT THAT SET OFF HER POMPADOUR TO ADVANTAGE, AND THERE WAS NO SPECIAL REASON, AS THEY HAD THE AFTERNOON BEFORE THEM, WHY THEY SHOULD NOT HAVE TAKEN SOME OF THE BY-PATHS THAT THE GIRL PREVIOURD TO LEAD OUT FROM THE SUBJECT INTO

OF THE BYTHAIRS THAT THE GRIC HERCAYED TO LEAD OUT THOM THE SACRED WITH SERVICE SACRED WAYS, WHICH WERE MADENLY AND GOOD, OF OPENING UP TO PETER COMPORTABLE LITTLE GARDEN FLOTS OF EXSTENCE WHICH, THOUGH THEY LAY FAR THIS SIDE OF THE HOUSE AND THE LOVELY LADY, HAD IN THE MONOTONY OF THE LONG CLIMB UP THE SCALE OF SIEGEL BROTHERS, moments of importunate invitation.

MAD IN THE MONOTORY OF THE LONG CLIMB OF THE SCALE OF STEEL BROTHERS, moments of importunate invitation.

"AND YOU CAME UP TO THE CITY," PETER WENT ON IN THE GRAVELLED WALK OF FACT, "JUST TO IMPROVE YOURSELF IN SHORTHAND SO YOU COULD GET SUCH A

situation? I don't see why you hesitate."

Miss Havens could hardly say why herself. "There were so many ways of bettering one's self in the city. I've a great many friends here." she hinted.

"Not so many." Peter reminded her. "As you'd have where you were brought up." "You are staving in the city?" Miss Havens suggested.

"THAT'S DIFFERENT, I HAVE TO." HE HAD ALREADY TOLD HER ABOUT ELLEN AND also about his mother. "And are you always going to stay on here like this, working and

WORKING AND NEVER TAKING ANY TIME FOR YOURSELF? AREN'T YOU EVER GOING to ... marry?" "I KNOW TOO MUCH WHAT POVERTY IS LIKE TO ASK ANY WOWAN TO SHARE IT."

"Suppose she should ask you?" "They don't do that; the right sort."

Peter protested.

"I DON'T SEE WHY ... IF SOME GIRL ... CARED ... AND IF SHE SAW ... ANYBODY

STRUGGLING ALONG UNDER BURDENS SHE WOULD BE GLAD TO SHARE. AND SHE

ought not to let him know?" "I think it wouldn't be best." said Peter.

"You think the man would despise her?"

"Not that: but if he liked her a little ... he might consent to it ... just

BECAUSE HE LIKED HER AND WAS TIRED MAYBE ... AND THAT WOULDN'T BE good for either of them."

"Well, anyway, it doesn't concern either of us." said Miss Havens.

KNEW BECAUSE OF THAT HE DIDN'T MEAN TO ASK HER ... YOU THINK SHE

THE NEXT EVENING AS PETER WAS LETTING HIMSELF IN AT HIS OWN DOOR—HE

stopped him. "MISS HAVENS LEFT HER REGARDS FOR YOU," SHE EXPLAINED. "SHE WENT TOdav."

HAD MOVED TO THE SECOND FLOOR FRONT BY THIS TIME-MRS. BLODGETT

"Oh." said Peter. "wasn't it sudden?"

"SORT OF. SHE'D BEEN CONSIDERIN" OF IT FOR SOME TIME, AND LAST NIGHT SHE MADE UP HER MIND. BUT I DID THINK." SAID MRS. BLODGETT. "THAT SHE'D HAVE SAID GOOD-BYE TO VOU." AND NOT ELICTING ANYTHING BY WAY OF A REPLY, SHE ADDED: "MISS HAVENS IS A NICE GIRL. I HATE TO THINK OF HER slavin' her life out in an office. She'd ought to get married."

"A GIRL HAS EVER SO MANY MORE CHANGES IN HER HOME TOWN." PETER offered hopefully.

"YES, I SUPPOSE SO," MRS, BLODGETT SIGHED, "IS THERE ANYTHING I CAN DO for you, Mr. Weatheral?"

"Nothing, thank you." He was lingering still on the landing on Mrs.

BLODGETT'S ACCOUNT, BUT HE FOUND HIS FINGER SLIPPING BETWEEN THE leaves of the volume he had brought from the library. "A.H." SHE WARNED HIM. "READIN" IS AN IMPROVIN' OCCUPATION. BUT THERE'S

A BOOK WE HADN'T ANY OF US OUGHT TO MISS. AND THAT'S THE BOOK OF LIFE. Mr. Weatheral." And somehow with that ringing in his ears. Peter SPENT SEVERAL MINUTES WALKING UP AND DOWN IN HIS ROOM BEFORE HE could settle to his book again.

IT WAS A WEEK OR TEN DAYS AFTER MISS HAVENS LEFT, BEFORE PETER WENT DOWN TO BLOOMBURY FOR HIS MIDSUMMER VACATION. A WEEK IN WHICH HE HAD THE GREATEST DIFFICULTY IN GETTING BACK TO THE HOUSE OF THE SHINING WALLS. HE SET OUT FOR IT ALMOST IMMEDIATELY WITH A FEETING AKIN TO THE RELEASE WITH WHICH ONE RETURNS TO DAILY HABIT AFTER THE DEPARTURE OF AN UNEXPECTED GLEST. BUT HIS THOUGHT WOULD NO SOONER STRIKE INTO THE ACCUSTOMED PATHS THAN MISS MINNE HAVENS WOULD MEET HIM THERE UNACCOUNTABLY, TO BEGIN AGAIN THOSE LONG INTIMATE CONVERSATIONS WHICH LED TOWARD AND ABOUT THE HOUSE, BUT NEVER QUITE TO IT. PETER FOUND HIMSELF LOOKING OUT FOR THOSE MEETINGS WITH SOME NOTION OF DODGING THEM, AND YET ONCE THEY WERE FAIRLY OFF, HE OWNED THEM A GREAT RELIEF FROM BLODGETT'S. NOW THAT IT WAS WITHDRAWN, HE REALIZED IN THE GIR 'S BRIGHT COMPANIONSHIP THE FEFFCT OF THE ROSE-RED GLOW OF THE SHADE THAT AGGIE DREW DOWN OVER THE FRONT PARLOUR LAMP ON THE EVENINGS WHEN THE GENTLEWEN'S OUTETTER CALLED. IT HAD PREVENTED HIS SEEING UNTIL NOW. THAT THE CHIEF DIFFERENCE BETWEEN HIMSELF AND HIS FELLOW BOARDERS. WAS THAT FOR MOST OF THEM. THIS WAS A PLACE WHERE THEY HAD COME TO STAY. HAVING LET MISS HAVENS GO ON ALONE TO THE PLACE SHE WAS BOUND FOR, HE HAD MOMENTS OF DREADFUL SINKING, AS IT OCCURRED TO HIM TO WONDER IF HE HADN'T MADE A MISTAKE IN THE NATURE OF HIS OWN DESTINATION. SUPPOSE, AFTER ALL, HE SHOULD FIND HIMSELF CASTAWAY IN SOME CASIS OF DETERMINED SPRIGHTLINESS WITH WALLY WHITAKER IN WHOSE POOKET PRETENSES OF TIPS AND MARGINS HE REGAN TO DISCERN A POORER SORT OF SUBSTITUTE FOR THE HOUSE. HE WAS AS MUCH BORED BY THE PERMANENTLY YOUNG SHOE-SALESMAN AFTER THS DISCOVERY AS BEFORE IT. BUT OBLIGED TO SET A WATCH ON HIMSELF LEST IN A MOMENT OF FINDING HIMSELF TOO MUCH IN THE SAME CASE. HE SHOULD MAKE THE mistake of inviting Wally to Bloombury for his vacation.

HE WAS RELIEVED, WHEN AT LAST HE HAD GOT AWAY WITHOUT IT, TO BE SAVED FROM SUCH A MISADVIBNITURE, FOR HE FOUND HIS MOTHER NOT STANDING THE

HIMSELF THE IDEA THAT THERE COULD ANYTHING HAPPEN TO HIS MOTHER: SHE WAS AS MUCH A PART OF HIS LIFE AS THE AGING APPLE TREES AND THE HILLS. THAT CLIMBED, WITH LOW, GNARLED PINES TO THE SKY'S EDGE BEYOND THE MARSHES, A POINT FROM WHICH TO TAKE DISTANCE AND DIRECTION, HE BEGAN TO NOTE NOW THE GRAYING HAIR, THE SHRUNKEN BREAST AND THE WORN HANDS, SO BLUE VENED FOR ALL THEIR BROWNNESS, AND HE COULD NOT SLEEP OF NIGHTS BECAUSE OF THE SWEAT THAT WAS ON HIS SOUL. FOR FEAR OF WHAT

HEAT WELL, AND ELLEN ANXIOUS. HE HAD NEVER DEFINITELY SHAPED TO

MIGHT COME TO HER. HE WOULD LIE IN THE LITTLE ROOM UNDER THE ROOF AND HEAR THE BLMS MOVING LIKE THE RIFFLE OF SILENCE INTO SOUND. THINKING OF HIS MOTHER UNTIL AT LAST HE WOULD BE OBLIGED TO RISE AND MOVE SOFTLY ABOUT THE PLACE, AS IF BY THE MERE ASSERTION OF HIMSELF HE COULD MAKE HER SAFER IN IT. HE WISHED NOTHING SO MUCH AS NOT TO DISTURB HER. BUT SHE MUST HAVE BEEN LYING AWAKE OFTEN HERSELF. FOR THE SECOND OR THRD TIME THIS HAPPENED. SHE CALLED TO HIM. HE CAME. HALF DRESSED AS HE WAS AND DREW THE COVERS UP CLOSE ABOUT HER SHOULDERS, AND WAS exceedingly gay and tender with her. "There's nothing troubling you, son?"

"Nothing—except to be sure there's nothing troubling vou."

She gave a little, low laugh like a girl.

"THAT'S SO LIKE YOUR FATHER. I REMEMBER HE WOULD GET UP IN THE NIGHT.

WHEN YOU WERE LITTLE. AND GO PROWLING ABOUT ... HE USED TO SAY HE WAS

AFRAID THE ROOF TREE WOULD FALL IN AND KILL YOU. AND YET HERE YOU ARE...."

SHE REACHED OUT TO GIVE HIM A LITTLE PAT. AS IF SOMEHOW TO REASSURE

HM. THE LOW DROPPING MOON MADE A SQUARE BLOCK OF LIGHT ON THE

UNCARPETED FLOOR: OUTSIDE. THE ORCHARD WAITED FOR THE DAWN, AND THE

HIM BACK WONDERFULLY THE LAST TWO OR THREE DAYS. AND ESPECIALLY AT night when I'd hear you creaking down the stair. There's a board there WHICH ALWAYS DOES CREAK, AND I'D HEAR YOU TRYING TO REMEMBER WHICH

fields brimmed life up to their very doors.

"You're like him in other ways." She went on "Somehow it's brought

"I haven't meant to keep you awake, mother."

"I've been awake. When you're getting along like, you bon't sleep
MUCH, Peter. Sleep is for dreaming, some of it, and the old bon't

it was, the same as he used to----"

MUCH, PETER. SLEEP IS FOR DREAMING, SOME OF IT, AND THE OLD DON'T dream."

"You're not to go calling yourself old, mother!"

"And me with a son going twenty-three! We weren't so young either when we were married, your father and I ... but I want you should sleep, Peter, and dream when you can. You have rleasant dreams, son?"

SON?"

"ANY AMOUNT OF THEM." HE WAS GOING OFF INTO ONE OF THOSE BRIGHT FANTASIES OF WHAT HE SHOULD DO WHEN HE WAS RICH AS HE MEANT TO BE, WITH WHICH HE HAD SO OFTEN BEGULLED ELLEN'S FAIN, BUT SHE KISSED HIM and sent him to bed again lest Ellen should hear them.

IT WAS NOT MORE THAN A DAY OR TWO AFTER THAT THE MINISTER'S WIFE CAUGHT YOUNG MR. WEATHERAL WALKING WITH HIS MOTHER IN THE BACK PASTURE WITH

TO WAS NOT MORE THANKS BY A STATE OF THE MOTHER IN THE BACK PASTURE WITH HIS ARM ABOUT HER, AND WAS SLIGHTLY SHOOKED BY IT, FOR THOUGH IT WAS THOUGHT HIGHLY COMMENDABLE IN HIM TO HAVE PAID OFF THE MORTGAGE AND MANAGED A SILK DRESS FOR HER AND ELLEN BESIDES, BLOOMBURY WAS NOT HABITUATED TO A LIVELY EXPRESSION OF FAMILY AFFECTION. PETER HAD CONSENTED TO GATHER THE HUCKLEBERRES WHICH ELLEN INSISTED WERE OF A SUPERIOR FLAVOUR IN THE BACK PASTURE, ON THE SOLE CONDITION THAT HIS MOTHER SHOULD COME WITH HIM, AND THE MINISTER'S WIFE HAD JUST STEPPED ASDE ON HER WAY TO THE TILLINGHURST'S TO GATHER THE SOUTHERWOOD WHICH GREW THERE, FOR THE MINISTER'S WINTER COUCH, WHEN SHE CAUGHT SIGHT OF THEM.

"SHE COULDN'T HAVE STARED MORE IF SHE'D CAUGHT ME WITH A GIRL." PETER protested.

"It'S ONLY THAT SHE'D HAVE THOUGHT IT MORE LIKELY," HIS MOTHER EXTENUATED. "I HORE YOU AREN'T COING TO BE A GIRL-HATER, PETER. I WANT before now, you mustn't think it's because I want to keep you for Ellen and me. What I don't want is that you should take to it just because there's a girl. Not but what that's natural, but there's more to it than that, Peter. For you," she sufflendied. She sat down on a gray, round stone while Peter stripped the bushes at her feet, and watched to see it his colour rose while she talked, or his gaze falled to meet hers at any point.

"I'D HAVE LIKED TO HAVE ELLEN MARRY," SAID ELLEN'S MOTHER, "SHE'S THAT KIND. HAVING A MAN OF HER OWN. MOST ANY KIND OF A MAN SO AS HE

YOU SHOULD MARRY SOME TIME, AND IF I HAVEN'T SEEMED ANXIOUS ABOUT IT

WOULD BE GOOD TO HER, WOULD MEAN SUCH A LOT. IF ELLEN CAN HAVE A LITTLE OF WHAT EVERYBODY'S HAVING, SHE'S SATISHED. BUT THERE ARE SOME WHO CAN GET A GREAT DEAL MORE OUT OF IT THAN THAT ... AND IF THEY DON'T THE REST OF IT IS A DRAG AND A WEARNESS." HE LETT OFF STRIPPING THE BUSHES and turned contentedly against her knees.

"You're my home, Mumsey."

"AND NOT EVEN," SHE GENTLY INSSTED, "WHEN I'M NOT HERE TO MAKE IT FOR

"AND NOT EVEN," SHE GENTLY INSISTED, "WHEN I'M NOT HERE TO MAKE IT FOR YOU. THERE'S A KIND OF LIFE COES WITH LOVING; IT'S LIKE—LIKE THE LOVELY INSIDE COLOUR OF A SHELL, AND SOMEHOW, THIS WINTER I'VE WONDERED IF YOU'D GOT TO THE PLACE WHERE YOU KNEW WHAT THAT WOULD BE LIKE IF YOU SHOULD FRO IT." SHE TURNED HIS FACE UP TO HER WITH A TENDER ANXIETY AND YET WITH A LITTLE TIMIDITY; THEY DID NOT TALK MUCH OF SUCH THINGS IN Bloombury.

"I know, mother."

"Yes...." After a long look, "You would; You're so like your father. But if you know, You mustn't ever be led by dullness or loneliness into anything less, Peter. Not that I'm Afraid You'll be led into anything wrong ... but there are things that are almost more wrong than

downright wickedness....
"I'VE BEEN THINKING A GREAT DEAL LATELY ABOUT WHEN I WAS YOUR AGE, AND
THERE DIDN'T SEEM ANYTHING FOR ME BUT TO MARRY ONE OF THE NEGABOLR'S

BOYS THAT I'D KNOWN ALWAYS, OR A LONG PLAIN PIECE OF SCHOOL TEACHING. IT WASN'T FASY WITH EVERYBODY EGGING ME ON-BUT I STUCK IT OUT. AND AT THE LAST ALONG CAME YOUR FATHER ... I'D LIKE YOU TO HAVE SOMETHING LIKE THAT, PETER,—AND YOUR SON COMING TO YOU THE WAY YOU CAME TO ME, LIKE IT WAS THROUGH A CLOUD OF GLORY...." HE LOOKED UP PRESENTLY ON HER SILENCE, SILVER TIPPED NOW WITH THE HOPE OF RENEWAL. AND HE SAW HER AS A MAN SOMETIMES WHEN HE IS YOUNG AND CLEAN, SEES HIS MOTHER. THE SACRED DOOR ... AND HE DID NOT OBSERVE AT ALL THAT HER HANDS WERE BERRY STAINED AND THE NAILS BROKEN, NOR THAT HER CHEEK HAD FALLEN IN AND HER HAIR GRAY AND WISPY. BUT BEING A YOUNG MAN AND NEVER GOOD AT TALKING. IT MADE NO DIFFERENCE WITH HIM EXCEPT THAT AS THEY WALKED HOME ACROSS THE PASTURES HE WAS MORE THAN EVER CAREFUL OF HER AND teased her more whimsically. HE FORGOT, AFTER HE HAD SETTLED IN HIS ROOM AGAIN AT BLODGETT'S, THAT MISS MINNIE HAVENS HAD EVER WALKED WITH HIM IN THE PURLIEUS OF THE HOUSE, FOR HE WAS QUITE TAKEN UP WITH A NEW SET OF ROOMS HE HAD THROWN OUT FROM IT FOR HIS MOTHER. SHE WAS ALWAYS THERE WITH HIM NOW UNTIL THE DAY OF HER DEATH AND LONG AFTER, MADE A PART OF ALL HIS DREAMING BY THE TOUCH WITH WHICH SHE HAD LIMNED IN HERSELF FOR HIM. the feature of all Lovely Ladies. HE WOULD WRITE HER LONG LETTERS INTO WHICH CREPT MUCH THAT HAD BEEN UTTERED ONLY IN THE HOUSE, WHICH THAT WINTER BECAME AN ESTATE IN FLORIDA, MOVED THERE BECAUSE OF MRS. WEATHERAL'S NEED OF MLD CLIMATE THEY WENT ARROAD AFTER THE CHRISTMAS HOLIDAYS IN WHICH SHE HAD COUGHED MORE THAN USUAL AND CONSENTED TO HAVE HER BREAKFAST. BROUGHT UP TO BED. SETTING OUT EVERY EVENING FROM PETER'S READING-LAMP AND ARRIVING VERY SHORTLY AT ITALIAN CATHEDRALS AND OLD ROMAN. seaport towns that smelled of history. DREAMING OF LOVELY LADIES WHO HAVE NO FACE OR FORM OTHER THAN THEY BORROW FROM THE PASSING INCIDENT IS A VERY PLEASANT WAY OF PASSING THE TIME, AND DOES NOT NECESSARILY LEAD TO ANYTHING; BUT WHEN A MAN

GOES ABOUT AFRAID LEST HIS MOTHER SHOULD DIE FOR LACK OF SOMETHING HE MIGHT HAVE GOT FOR HER, HE DREAMS CLOSER AT HOME. MORE THAN EVER RICH, AND SINCE THERE WAS NOTHING NEARER TO HIM THAN THE WAY SIEGEL. Brothers had managed it. He devoted so much time to the scrutiny of THEIR METHODS THAT HE PASSED IN A VERY SHORT TIME FROM BRING HEAD OF THE DELIVERY DEPARTMENT TO THE RIGHT HAND OF MR. CROKER. EVEN BLINDERS COULD NOT RECALL, IN THE THREE YEARS HE HAD BEEN BUNDLE BOY, SO

SINCE THE REVILATION OF HIS MOTHER'S FRAILNESS. PETER DREAMED OF BEING

marked an example of favouritism. "THEY DON'T MAKE PARTINERS ANY MORE OUT OF UNDERLINGS." CROKER LET him know confidentially. "What do you think you're headed for?" Peter

explained himself. "I wanted to find out how they did it." "AND WHEN YOU FIND OUT." CROKER WAGGED AT HIM. "YOU WON'T BE ABLE TO DO ANYTHING WITH IT. YOU HAVE TO HAVE CAPITAL. LOOK AT THE TIME I'VE been with them!"

"How long is that?" Peter was interested. "Twenty years." Croker told him.

"In twenty years," Peter was confident, "a man ought to be able to find some capital." After that he began to observe Mr. Croker. IT IS PROBABLE AT THIS TIME THAT IF HE HAD NOT BEEN CONCERNED FOR HIS MOTHER'S HEALTH. HE MIGHT HAVE GROWN AS DRY AND UNINTERESTING AS AT

Blodgett's they began to think him. HE WAS A THIN YOUNG MAN WITH HAIR OF NO PARTICULAR COLOUR, AND EYES THAT WERE GOOD AND RATHER SHY ABOUT WOMEN. HE WENT OUT VERY LITTLE

AND HAD NOT. MISS THATCHER WHO SAT OPPOSITE HIM WAS SURE. A MIND

ABOVE HIS BUSINESS. AGGIE HAD MARRIED HER OUTFITTER, AND J. WILKINSON COHN, WHO HAD BECOME A FULL PARTNER IN HIS BROTHER'S CIGAR

STAND, HAD MOVED OUT TO FIFTY-FOURTH STREET, SO THAT THERE WAS NOBODY WHO COULD HAVE CONTRADICTED HER. BUT LYING AWAKE PLANNING HOW HE MIGHT PIECE OUT LIFE FOR HIS MOTHER WITH COMFORTS. AND HEARING IN EVERY

KNOCK THE PRECURSOR OF WHAT MIGHT HAVE HAPPENED TO HER. HIS HEART

ANMETY. AND BEYOND THE HEART STRETCHING THERE WAS ALWAYS THE HOUSE.
HE COULD SELDOM GET AWAY TO IT IN HIS WAKING HOURS, BUT HE KNEW IT
WAS THERE FOR HIM, AND VISITING IT IN DREAMS HE KEPT IN STIFL OF THE
ANMETY AND MR. CROKER, HIS YOUNG RESILENCY. ALONG IN DECEMBER,
about two weeks before his midwinter holiday, Ellen sent for him.
"It'S NOT AS IF THERE HADN'T BEEN TIME FOR EVERYTHING. YOU MUST THINK OF
THAT, PETER AND YOUR BEING ABLE TO COME DOWN EVERY SATURDAY SINCE
THE FIRST STROKE. THERE'S PLENTY THAT ARE HURRIED AWAY WITHOUT A GOOD-

Was exercised as it is good for the heart to be even with Pain and

bye or anything."
"I know, Ellen."
"AND IT ISN'T AS IF THERE HADN'T BEEN PLENTY TO SAY, ETHER. SIX WEEKS
WOULD HAVE BEEN TOO LONG FOR ANYBODY LESS LOVING THAN MOTHER. THEY
WOULDN'T HAVE KNOWN HOW TO GO THROUGH YOUR LIFE AND SAY JUST THE

WOLLDN'T HAVE KNOWN HOW TO GO THROUGH YOUR LIFE AND SAY JUST THE
THINGS YOU'LL BE GLAD TO REMEMBER WHEN THE TIME COMES FOR THEM
You've got to keep your mind on those things, Peter."

"Yes, Ellen."

THE FRONT ROOM HAD BEEN WELL RID UP AFTER THE FLARRAL AND EVERYBODY AT

ELLEN'S EARNEST ENTREATY HAD LEFT THEM QUITE ALONE ALTHOUGH THERE WAS FIRE IN THE BASE BURNER, THEY WERE SITTING TOGETHER BY THE KITCHEN STOVE, THE FRONT OF WHICH WAS THROWN OPEN FOR THE SAKE OF THE WARM GLOW OF THE COALS. BY AND BY THE KETILE BESAN TO SING AND THE BARE TIPS OF THE

LILAC SCRATCHED ON THE PANE LIKE A LIVE THING WAITING TO BE LET IN. THE little familiar sounds refilled for them the empty room.

OUTSIDE IT WAS EVERY WAY SUCH A DAY AS A WELL-SPENT LIFE MIGHT SUP AWAY IN, THE TRACKS IN THE DEEP-RUTTED FEBRUARY SNOW MIGHT HAVE BEEN WAD IN THESE BY THE HARDET OF STORY YEARS. THERE WAS NO WAIT OF THE

BEEN WORN THERE BY THE HABIT OF SIXTY YEARS. THERE WAS NO HINT OF THE
SFRING YET, BUT HERE AND THERE IN THE BARE PATCHES ON THE HILLS AND THE
FRAYED ICY EDGES OF THE DRIFTS, THE SIGN THAT THE WEIGHT OF THE WINTER
WAS BRHIND THEM THERE WOLLD BE A LITTLE QUIET TIME YET AND THEN THE

RESURRECTION. THE BROTHER AND SISTER HAD TAKEN IT ALL VERY QUETLY.

SENSE OF LEAVING HER BEHND. THEY WERE GOING ON WITH THEIR LIFE SO soon because she was going with them.

"THAT WAS WHY I WANTED THEM ALL TO GO AWAY," ELLEN TOOK UP THE THOUGHT AGAIN. "I'VE BEEN THINKING ALL DAY ABOUT MOTHER BEING WITH FATHER AND HOW GLAD HE'LL BE TO SEE HER, AND YET IT SEEMS AS IF I CAN FEEL HER HERE. I THOUGHT IF WE KEPT STILL A WHILE SHE'D MAKE US understand what she wanted us to do."

"About what, Ellen?"

"ABOUT MY GOING UP TO THE CITY WITH YOU TO BOARD—IT seems SUCH A wasteful way to live somehow, just sitting around!"

"It ISN'T AS EXPENSIVE AS KEEPING HOUSE," PETER TOLD HER, "AND I WANT YOU TO SIT AROUND. ELLEN: WOMEN IN BLOOMBURY DON'T GET BNOUGH OF THAT

"THEY DON'T DID YOU SEE ADA HARVEY TO-DAY? FOUR CHURREN AND TWO

THOSE CATHOLICS BURNING CANDLES. IT SEEMED AS IF SHE THOUGHT YOU'D GET SOMETHING OUT OF IT IF IT WAS JUST GOING ON, EVEN IF YOU DIDN'T VISIT IT

NOBODY HAD EVER TAKEN ANYTHING IN ANY OTHER WAY IN THE PRESENCE OF MRS. WEATHERAL, AND THAT SHE WAS THERE STILL FOR THEM, THAT SHE WOULD ALWAYS BE PRESENT IN THEIR LIVES, A WARM DETERMING INFLUENCE, WAS WITNESSED BY THAT ABSENCE OF VIOLENCE WHICH EMPTIES TOO SOON THE CLIP OF GRIFE. THE LOSS OF THEIR MOTHER HAD AT LIFAST BROUGHT THEM NO.

TEETH OUT, AND HER NOT THIRTY. I GUESS YOU'D TAKE BETTER CARE OF ME THAN that, Peter,—only——"

I'm afraid "

"You think she wouldn't like it for you?"

"SHE THOUGHT SUCH A LOT OF KEEPING UP A HOME. PETER. IT WAS LIKE—LIKE

MORE THAN TWO OR THREE TIMES A YEAR LOTS OF WOMEN FEEL THAT WAY, Peter, and I quess there must be something in it."

"There is something in it," Peter assured her.

"And if I go and board with you we'd have — to break up everything

AGO. "FOR ALL IT WAS SUCH A COMFORT TO HER TO HAVE IT. IT'S AS GOOD AS NEW. IT SEEMED AS IF SHE THOUGHT YOU WERE THE ONLY ONE GOOD ENOUGH to sit in it " "Don't, Ellen," "I KNOW. PETER." THEY WERE SILENT A WHILE UNTIL THE DEEP WELLS OF GREE HAD STILLED IN THE SENSE OF THAT SUSTAINING PRESENCE. "I ONLY WANTED TO BE SURE I WOULDN'T BE GOING AGAINST HER, BREAKING UP THE HOWE, IT SEEMS LIKE ANYTHING SHE SET SUCH STORE BY OUGHTN'T TO STOP JUST BECAUSE SHE ISN'T HERE TO TAKE CARE OF IT." THEY HAD TO COME BACK TO that the next day and the next. "I only want to do what is best for you, Ellen." "I'D BE BEST OFF IF I WAS MAKING YOU HAPPY, PETER—AND I'D FEEL SUCH A burden somehow, just boarding." "The rents are CHEAPER IN THE SUBURBS," PETER WENT SO FAR AS TO ADMIT.

——" SHE LOOKED ABOUT ON ALL THE FAMILIAR MOULD OF DAILY HABIT THAT WAS HER WORLD, AND TEARS STARTED AFRESH. "AND WE'VE GOT ALL THIS FURNITURE." SHE MOVED HER HEAD TOWARD THE DOOR OF THE FRONT ROOM AND THE PARI OUR SET THAT HAD BEEN PETER'S CHRISTIMAS GIFT TO THEM TWO YEARS.

THE FERING APE OF ALEXEN HE SUBJECT PER PER WAS TO ADMIN. IT WAS ALL SO INARTICULATE IN HIM, HOW COULD HE EXPLAIN TO ELLEN THE FEELING THAT HE HAD, THAT SETTLING DOWN TO A HOME WITH HER WOULD SOMEHOW PUT AN END TO ANY DREAMS HE HAD HAD OF A HOME OF HIS OWN, PERSISTENT BUT UNSHAPED VISIONS THAT VANISHED BEFORE THE SUDDEN BRIGHT BUT UNSHAPED VISIONS THAT VANISHED BEFORE THE SUDDEN BRIGHT BUT UNSHAPED VISIONS THAT VANISHED BEFORE THE SUDDEN BROOKEN START VANISHED BEFORE THE SUDDEN BROOKEN SHE REMINDED HIM, "AND I hardly ever have to be in bed now."

THE FACT WAS THAT PETER HAD THE VERY PLACE IN MIND; HE HAD OFTEN WALKED OUT THERE ON SUNDAYS FROM BLOOSETT'S; HE THOUGHT THE NEG-BOURHOOD HAD A CLEAN AND HEALTHY LOOK. HE WENT UP ON TUESDAY

LESSING. WHO RENTED HIM THE APARTIMENT. MADE THE NATURAL MISTAKE

to see what could be done about it

INVITED. HE SAID THE NEIGHBOURS WERE ALL A MOST DESIRABLE CLASS OF PEOPLE, AND PETER COULD SEE FOR HIMSELF THAT THE CITY WAS BOUND TO BUILD OUT THAT WAY IN A FEW YEARS. AS FOR WHAT PLEASANTON COULD DO IN THE WAY OF CLIMATE, WELL, LESSING TOLD HIM, WITH THE AIR OF BEING ONLY A LITTLE LESS INTERESTED THAN HE CREDITED PETER WITH BEING, LOOK AT THE DEFAIRMULATORS.

ABOUT IT THAT PETER'S AGE AND HIS INEXPERIBNCE AS A HOUSEHOLDER.

PERAMBULATORS.

THEY WERE AS FINE A LOT OF WELLFILLED VEHICLES AS COULD BE PRODUCED BY ANY SUBURB ANYWHERE, AND ELLEN FOR ONE WAS NEVER TIRED OF LOOKING AT THEM. BUT PETER COULDN'T UNDERSTAND WHY ELLEN INSISTED ON WALKING home from church Sunday morning the wrong way of the pavement.

"I SUPPOSE WE DO GET IN THE WAY," SHE ADMITTED AFTER HE HAD EXPLAINED TO HER THAT THEY WOULDN'T BE GROWDED OFF SO FREQUENTLY IF THEY MOVED WITH THE NURSE-MAID'S PARADE AND NOT AGAINST IT, "BUT IF WE GO this way we can see all the little faces."

"I didn't know you cared so much for babies."

"I didn't know you cared so much for babies."
"WELL, YOU SEE IT ISN'T AS IF I WAS TO HAVE ANY OF MY OWN----"

SOMETHING IN THE TONE WITH WHICH SHE ADMITTED THE RESTRAINING FACT OF HER AFFLICTION BROUGHT OUT FOR PETER HOW SHE HAD HITTED HER LIFE TO IT, LIKE A PLANT GROWING HARDLY OUT OF A ROCK, CUMBING OVER AND AROUND IT WITHOUT RANCOUR OR REBELLION. AS HE TURNED NOW TO LOCK AT HER LONG, PLAN FACE IN THE LIGHT OF WHAT HAD BEEN GOING ON IN HINGELF LATELY, HE RECALLED THAT THE DETERMINING INFLUENCE WHICH HAD DRAWN HER THICK HAR INTO THAT UNDECOMING MOUT AT THE BACK OF HER NEXX HAD BEEN THE PAIN

PLAIN FACE IN THE LIGHT OF WHAT HAD BEEN GOING ON IN HIMSELF LATELY, HE recalled that the determining influence which had drawn her thick hair into that unbecoming knot at the back of her neck had been the fain it had given her when she first began to put up her hair, to do it higher.

She was watching the Bright Little Bonneted Heads go by with the same detachment that he had learned to look at the shop windows, without thinking of appropriating any of their shedour for himself,

AND WHEN SHE SPOKE AGAIN IT WAS WITHOUT ANY SENSIBLE CONNECTION

with the present occasion.

"SHAKEY WILLY, WE USED TO CALL HIM. I REMEMBER HIS FRECKLES; THEY WERE THE BIGGEST THING ABOUT HIM." HE WAITED FOR THE COMMUNICATING THREAD, BUT NOTHING CAME EXCEPT WHAT PRESENTLY REACHED HIM OUT OF HIS OWN YOUNG RECOLLECTIONS. "HE WASN'T GOOD BNOUGH FOR YOU, ELLEN," he said at last for all comment.

"Peter. do vou remember Willy Shakeley?"

"He was kind, and he wouldn't have minded about my being lame, but A MAN HAS TO HAVE A HEALTHY WIFE IF HE'S A FARMER." HOW COMPLETELY SHE HAD ACCEPTED THE DEPRIVATION FOR HERSELF, HE SAW BY HER NOT WASTING A SIGH OVER. IT, SHE HAD SCHOOLED HERSELF SO LONG TO GO NO FURTHER IN HER THOUGHT THAN SHE WENT ON THE CRUTCH WHICH TAPPED NOW

FURTHER IN HER THOUGHT THAN SHE WENT ON THE CRUTCH WHICH TAPHED NOW ON THE PAVEMENT BESIDE HIM. AS IF TO STOP HIS COING ANY FURTHER ON HER ACCOUNT SHE SMILED UP AT HIM. "PETER, IF YOU WERE TO MEET ANY OF THE THINGS YOU THOUGHT YOU'D GROW UP TO BE, DO YOU SUPPOSE YOU'D KNOW them?"

AT LEAST HE COULD HAVE TOLD HER THAT HE DIDN'T MEET ANY OF THEM ON HS way between Siegel Brothers and the flat in Pleasanton.

There are many things which if a young man goes without until he is twenty-five he can very well do without, but the one thing he cannot leave off without hurting him is the expectation of some time doing them. The obligation of the mortgage and Ellen's lameness had been

A SORT OF BRIDGE FOR PETER, A HIGH AIRY STRUCTURE WHICH ENGAGED THE BEST OF HIM AND SO CARRIED HIM SAFELY OVER BLODGETT'S WITHOUT ONCE LETTING HIM FALL HITO THE UNLOVELY VEIN OF LIFE THERE, IT'S NARROWNESS, IT'S COMMONLESS. HE HAD KNOWN, EVEN WHEN HE HAD KNOWN IT MOST

LETTING HIM FALL INTO THE UNLOVELY VEH OF LIFE HEHE, ITS NARROWNESS, ITS COMMONIESS. HE HAD KNOWN, EVEN WHEN HE HAD KNOWN IT MOST NACCESSBILE, THAT THERE WAS ANOTHER LIFE WHICH ANSWERED TO EVERY INSTINCT OF HIS FOR BEAUTY AND FITNESS. HE WAITED ONLY FOR THE RELEASE from strain for his entry with it. Now by the shock of his mother's death HE FOUND HIMSELF PRECIPITATED IN A FRAME OF LIVING WHERE A PARLOUR SET OUT OF SIEGE. BROTHERS' HOUSEHOLD EMPORTUM WAS THE LIMIT OF TASTIE AND INDERSTANDING. THE WORST THING AROUT SIEGE BROTHERS' PAGIO IR

SETS WAS THAT HE SOLD THEM. HE KNEW IT WAS HIS PARTICULAR VALUE TO

SIEGEL BROTHERS THAT HE HAD ALWAYS KNOWN WHAT SORT OF THINGS WERE ACCEPTABLE TO THE OUT-OF-TOWN TRADE. HE HAD SELECTED THIS ONE DISTINCTLY WITH AN EYE TO THE PLEASURE HIS MOTHER AND FILLEN WOULD GET OUT OF WHAT BLOOMBURY WOULD THINK OF IT. HE HADN'T EXPECTED IT WOULD TURN AND REND HIM. THAT IT WAS DISTINCTLY BETTER THAN ANYTHING HE HAD. HAD AT BLODGETT'S WAS INCONSIDERABLE BESIDE THE FACT THAT BLODGETT'S HADN'T OWNED HIM. THAT HE WAS OWNED NOW BY HIS SISTER AND THE FURNITURE. WAS PLAIN TO HIM THE FIRST TIME HE SAT DOWN TO FIGURE OUT THE DEFERENCE BETWEEN HIS SALARY AND WHAT IT WOULD COST HIM TO LET FLUEN BE A BURDEN TO HIM IN THE WAY THAT MADE HER HAPPIEST. NOT THAT HE THOUGHT OF ELLEN IN THAT WAY: HE WAS GLAD WHEN HE THOUGHT OF IT AT ALL ARTICULATELY, TO BE ABLE TO MAKE LIFE SO LITTLE OF A BURDEN TO HER. BUT THOUGH HE SAW QUITE CLEARLY HOW, WITHOUT SOME FORTUNATE ACCIDENT. THE REST OF HIS LIFE WOULD BE TAKEN UP WITH MAKING A HOME FOR ELLEN AND MAKING IT SECURE FOR HER IN CASE ANYTHING HAPPENED TO HIM. HE SAW TOO. THAT THERE WAS NO ROOM IN IT FOR THE LOVELY LADY. THE WORST OF ALL this was that he did not see how he was to go on without her. HE HAD FLED TO HER FROM THE INADEQUACY OF ALL SUBSTITUTES FOR HER THAT HIS LIFE AFFORDED. AND SHE HAD BNDED BY MAKING HIM OVER INTO THE SORT of man who could never be satisfied with anything less. Something he OWED. NO DOUBT. TO THAT TRAIT OF HIS FATHER'S WHICH MADE HIS MEMORIES OF ITALY MORE TO HIM THAN HIS INHERITANCE, BUT THERE IT WAS, A WORLD PETER HAD BUILT UP OUT OF BOOKS AND PICTURES AND MUSIC. MORE REAL AND HABITABLE THAN THAT IN WHICH HE WENT ABOUT IN A GRAY BUSINESS SUIT. and a pleasant ready manner; a world from which, every time he fitted HIS KEY IN THE LATCH OF THE LITTLE FLAT IN PLEASANTON, HE FELT HIMSELF suddenly dispossessed. IT WAS NOT THAT HE FAILED TO GET A PROPER PLEASURE OUT OF BEING A HOUSEHOLDER. IN BEING ABLE TO TAKE A CERTAIN TONE WITH THE BUTCHER AND DISCUSS WATER RATES AND RENTS WITH OTHER HOUSEHOLDERS GOING TO AND FRO ON HIS TRAIN. ELLEN'S COOKING TASTED GOOD TO HIM AND IT WAS VERY

PLEASANT TO SEE THE PLEASURE IT GAVE HER TO HAVE BURNELL OF THE HARDWARE, OUT TO SUPPER COCASIONALLY. HE MADE FRIBNDS WITH LESSING, WHOSE NATTY AND DETERMINEDLY ARCHITECTURAL OFFICE WITH ITS AIR OF BEING THE VERY FIRST OCCASION TO ASK HIM HOW HIS SISTER DID. IN AN EFFORT TO CORRECT ANY IMPRESSION OF A WANT OF PERSPICITIVE IN HIS FIRST ESTIMATE OF PETER'S STUATION. HE KEPT IT UP FOR THE REASON PERHAPS THAT MEN FRIBNOS ARE MEANT FOR EACH OTHER FROM THE BEGINNING OF TIME QUITE AS MICH AS WE ARE ACCUSTOMED TO THINKING OF THEM AS BEING MEANT FOR THE LOVELY LADIES WHOM THEY SO FREQUENTLY MISS. LESSING WAS ABOUT PETER'S OWN AGE AND HAD LARGE AND CHEERFUL NOTIONS OF THE PROBABLE INCREASE OF REAL-ESTATE VALUES IN PLEASANTON, COMBINED WITH A JUST appreciation of the simple shrewdness which had so reconvended Peter to his employers. "YOU'D BE A CRACKERIACK TO TALK TO THE OLD LADIES." LESSING GENEROUSLY PRAISED HIM. "I SCARE 'BM: THEY THINK I'M TOO HOPEFUL." THAT HE DIDN'T. HOWEVER. HAVE THE SAME EFFECT ON YOUNG LADIES WAS APPARENT FROM the very pretty one whom Peter used to see about, especially on early CLOSING SATURDAY AFTERNOONS, HELPING HIM TO SHUT UP THE OFFICE AND GET OFF TO THE BALL GAME. HE COULDN'T HAVE TOLD WHY, BUT THOSE WERE THE DAYS WHEN PETER ALLOWED THE CAR TO CARRY HIM ON TO THE NEXT BLOCK. BEFORE ALIGHTING. AFTER WHICH HE WOULD MAKE A POINT OF BEING PARTICULARLY KIND TO ELLEN. IT WOULD NEVER DO FOR HER TO GET A NOTION THAT THE TAPPING OF HER CRUTCH BESIDE HIM HAD SCARED ANYTHING OUT OF Peter's life which he might think worth having in it. ALONG TOWARD THANKSGIVING TIME, ON AN OCCASION WHEN PETER HAD JUST MISSED HIS CAR AND HAD TO WAIT FOR ANOTHER ONE, LESSING-J. B. ON THE DOOR SIGN. THOUGH HE WAS THE SORT THAT EVERYBODY WHO KNEW HIM CALLED JULIAN—CAME QUITE QUIT TO THE PAVEMENT AND STOOD THERE WITH HIS HANDS IN HIS POCKETS AND HIS HAIR BEGINNING TO CLIRL BOYISH Y IN THE DAMPNESS, QUITE BRIMMING OVER WITH GOOD FORTUNE. SINGULARLY HE DIDN'T MENTION IT AT ONCE, BUT BEGAN TO COMPLAIN ABOUT THE LOW STATE OF the market in real estate. "Not but that the values are all right," he was careful to explain; "it's JUST THAT THEY*ar*e all right makes it so trying. If a fellow had a little

SOMEHOW AKIN TO WALLY WHITAKER, COCUPIED THE CORNER WHERE PETER WAITED EVERY MORNING FOR HIS CAR I ESSING BEGAN IT BY COMING OUT ON "You think it's a good time then to lay out a little money?"

"Good! Good! OH, Loro, it's so good that if a fellow had a few thousands just fut around judiciously, he wouldn't be able to sleep nights for hearing it turn over." He kidded the gravel in sheer

CAPITAL NOW, HE COULD DO WONDERS. THE DELICE OF A CHAP LIKE ME IS that he hasn't any capital unless there's some buying."

NIGHTS FOR HEARING IT TURN OVER." HE KICKED THE GRAVEL IN SHEER impatience. "How's your sister?"

IT WAS A FORMULA THAT HE HAD KEPT ON WITH BECAUSE TO HAVE DROPPED IT

IT WAS A FORMULA THAT HE HAD KEPT ON WITH BECAUSE TO HAVE DROPPED IT IMMEDIATELY MOHT HAVE BETRAYED THE EXTENDATING NATURE OF ITS INCEPTION, AND BESIDES THERE WERE SO MANY DIRECTIONS IN WHICH ONE MOHT START CONVERSATIONALLY OFF FROM IT. HE MADE USE OF IT NOW WITHOUT WAITING FOR PETER'S HABITUAL "VERY WELL, THANK YOU," BY A BURST INTO CONFIDENCE.

"YOU SEE I'M ENGAGED TO BE MARRED—YES, I GUESS YOU'VE SEEN ME WITH HER. FACT IS, I HAVEN'T CARED HOW MUCH PEOPLE HAVE SEEN SO LONG AS SHE'S SEEN IT, TOO; AND NOW WE'VE GOT IT ALL PIXED UP, NATURALLY I'M ON the make. I'm dashed if I don't think I'll have to take a partner."

"I'VE BEEN WANTING TO SPEAK TO YOU ABOUT SOME PROPERTY OF MINE,"
Peter ventured. "It's a farm up country."
"What's it worth?"

"Well, I've added to it some the last ten years and made considerable improvement. I ought to get three thousand."

"THAT'S FOR FARMING? FOR SUMMER RESIDENCE IT OUGHT TO BRING MORE than that. Any scenery?"

"PLENTY," PETER SATISFIED HIM ON THAT SCORE. "IVE BEEN THINKING," HE LET OUT SHYLY. "THAT IF I COULD BUT THE PRICE OF IT IN SOME BLACE WHERE I COULD

Lessing turned on him a suddenly brightening eye.

watch it, the money would do me more good "

"THAT'S THE TALK—SAY, YOU KNOW I THINK I COULD GET YOU FORTY-FIVE HUNDRED FOR THAT FARM OF YOURS ANYWAY." THEY LOOKED AT ONE ANOTHER ON THE VERGE OF THINGS HOPEFUL AND CONSIDERABLE. AS PETER'S CAR. SWUNG AROUND THE CURVE, SUDDENLY THEY BLUSHED, BOTH OF THEM, AND reached out and shook hands THAT EVENING AS PETER CAME HOME HE SAW LESSING BLYING CHRYSANTHEMUMS AT THE FLORIST'S WITH A HAPPY COUNTENANCE, AND TO master the gueer pang it gave him. Peter got off the car and walked a LONG WAY OUT ON THE DIM WET PAVENENT. HE WAS LOOKING AT THE BRIGHT PICTURE OF LESSING AND THE GIRL—SHE WAS REALLY VERY PRETTY—AND SEEING INSTEAD. HIMSELF, QUITE THE BACHELOR, AND HIS LAME SISTER TAKING THEIR BLAMBLESS DULL WAY IN THE WORLD. HE COULDN'T ANY MORE FOR THE LIFE OF HIM, GET A PICTURE OF HIMSELF WITHOUT ELLEN IN IT: THE TAPPING OF HER CRUTCH SOUNDED EVEN IN THE HOUSE WHEN HE VISITED IT IN HIS DREAMS. IT WAS WELL ON THIS OCCASION THAT HE HAD ELLEN BESIDE HIM. FOR SHE SHOWED HIM THE WAY PRESENTLY TO TAKE IT. AS HE KNEW SHE WOULD TAKE IT AS SOON AS HE WENT HOME AND TOLD HER—AS ANOTHER DOOR BY WHICH THEY COULD ENTER SYMPATHETICALLY IN THE JOYOUSNESS THEY WERE DENIED. SHE WOULD BE SO PLEASED FOR JULIAN'S SAKE, IN WHOM, BY PETER'S ACCOUNT OF HIM. SHE TOOK THE GREATEST INTEREST, AND SO PLEASED FOR THE GRL TO HAVE SUCH A HANDSOME CAPABLE LOVER. IT MADE FOR ELLEN, A better thing of life if somebody could have him. PETER WENT BACK AFTER A WHILE WITH THAT THOUGHT TO THE FLORIST'S AND BOUGHT CHRYSANTHEMUMS. TAKING CARE TO ASK FOR THE SAME KIND MR. LESSING HAD JUST ORDERED. HE WAS FEELING OUTE CHEERFUL EVEN, AS HE RAN UP THE STEPS WITH THEM A FEW MINUTES LATER. AND SAW THE SQUARE OF LIGHT UNDER THE HALF-DRAWN CURTAIN, AND HEARD THE TAP OF ELLEN'S CRUTCH. coming to meet him. THAT NIGHT AFTER HE HAD GONE TO BED A VERY SINGULAR THING HAPPENED. THE PRINCESS OUT OF THE PICTURE VISITED HIM. IT WAS THERE AT THE FOOT OF HIS BED IN A NEW FRAME WHERE ELLEN HAD HUNG IT—THE YOUNG KNIGHT RIDING DOWN THE OLD. LUMPY DRAGON, BUT WITH AN AIR THAT PETER HADN'T FOR A LONG TIME BEEN ABLE TO MANAGE FOR HIMSELF, DOING A GREAT THING

SALES MANAGER OF SIEGEL BROTHERS HAD BEEN LYING STARING UP AT IT FOR SOME TIME WHEN THE PRINCESS SPOKE TO HIM. HE KNEW IT WAS SHE. THOUGH THERE WAS NO FACE NOR FORM THAT HE COULD REMEMBER IN HIS waking hours, except that it was familiar. "Ellen is right." She told him: "It doesn't really matter so long as somebody finds me." "But what have I done?" Peter was sore with a sense of personal. SLIGHT. "IT WASN'T IN THE STORY THAT THERE SHOULD BE A WHOLE OROP OF dragons."

EASILY THE WAY ONE KNEW PERFECTLY GREAT THINGS COULDN'T. THE ASSISTANT

"ALL DRAGONS ARE MADE SO THAT WHERE ONE HEAD COMES OF THERE ARE SEVEN IN ITS PLACE. AND YOU MUST REVIEWBER IF SOMEBODY DIDN'T GO ABOUT SLAYING THEM, I COULDN'T BE AT ALL." THIS AS SHE SAID IT HAD A

DEEP MEANING FOR PETER THAT AFTERWARD ESCAPED HIM. "AND YOU CAN HOLD THE DREAM. IT TAKES A LOT OF DREAMING TO BRING ONE LIKE ME TO pass." "I'M SICK OF DREAMS." SAID PETER. "A MAN DIES AFTER A LITTLE WHO IS FED.

"They die quicker if they stop dreaming; on those that have the gift for IT THE BUSINESS OF DREAMING FALLS. LISTEN! HOW MANY THAT YOU KNOW

on nothing else."

have found me?" "A great many think they have; it comes to the same thing."

"The same for them, but you must see that I can never really be until I

AM FOR THOSE OUTSIDE THE DREAM. THE TROUBLE WITH YOU IS THAT YOU'D

wake up after a while and you would know."

"Yes." Peter admitted. "I should know." "Well, then," she was oh, so gentle about it. "Yours is the Better Part, If

YOU CAN'T HAVE ME, AT LEAST YOU'RE NOT STOPPING ME BY LEAVING OFF FOR something else. In the dream I can live and grow, and you can grow to you from that at any rate." "No." SAID PETER, "IT WAS THE DRAGON SAVED ME. I THOUGHT YOU WERE she. It's saved me from lots of things, now that I think of it."

ME. DO YOU REMEMBER WHAT HAPPENED TO ADA HARVEY? I'VE SAVED

"AH, THAT'S WHAT WE HAVE TO DO BETWEEN US, PETER, WE HAVE TO SAVE vou. You're worth saving."

"SAVE ME FOR WHAT?" PETER CRIED OUT TO HER AND SO STRONGLY IN HIS LONELINESS THAT HE FOUND HIMSELF STARTING UP FROM HIS BED WITH IT. HE COULD SEE THE DRAGON SPITTING FLAMES AS BEFORE. AND THE PALE LIGHT

from the swinging street lamp GLDING THE FRAME OF THE PICTURE. THOUGH HE DID NOT UNDERSTAND ALL THAT HAD HAPPENED TO HIM, AS HE LAY DOWN AGAIN HE WAS MORE COMFORTED THAN HE HAD BEEN AT ANY TIME SINCE HE had made up his mind that he was to be a bachelor.

PART FOUR

IN WHICH THE LOVELY

LADY MAKES A

FINAL APPEARANCE

PART FOUR

IN WHICH THE LOVELY LADY MAKES A FINAL APPEARANCE

On the day that the silver-laged maple, then in fullest leaf, had passed BY THE SPACE OF THREE DELICATE PALM-SHAPED BANNERS THE SILL OF THE THRD-STORY OFFICE WINDOW, LESSING, OF WEATHERAL, LESSING & CO., Brokers in Real Estate, crossed over to his partner's desk before SITTING DOWN AT HIS OWN. AND REWAINED QUIETLY LEANING AGAINST IT AND LOOKING OUT OF THE WINDOW WITHOUT A WORD. HE REMAINED THERE STARING OUT OVER THE NEW, ORDERLY GROWTH OF THE SUBURB, TOWARD THE RIVER, UNTIL THE STENOGRAPHER FROM THE OUTER ROOM HAD COME IN WITH THE VASE WHICH SHE HAD BEEN FILLING WITH GREAT GOLDEN ROSES. AND GONE OUT AGAIN, AFTER PLACING IT CAREFULLY IN THE EXACT MIDDLE OF THE TOP OF THE JUNIOR PARTINER'S DESK. BY THAT TIME LESSING'S RATHER PLUMP, PRACTICAL HAND HAD CREPT OUT ALONG THE RIM OF THE DESK UNTIL IT WAS COVERED BY PETER'S LEAN ONE, AND STILL NETHER OF THEM HAD SAID A WORD. THE ROSES HAD COME IN FROM LESSING'S COUNTRY PLACE THAT MORNING IN LESSING'S CAR, AND LESSING'S WIFE HAD GATHERED THEM. THERE WERE EXACTLY SEVENTEEN, FULL-BLOWN AND FRAGRANT, AND ONE SWALL BUD OF PROMISE WHICH PETER PRESENTLY REMOVED FROM ITS VASE TO HIS BUTTON HOLE. THE ACT HAD ALMOST THE SIGNIFICANCE OF A RITUAL. A THING DONE MANY TIMES with particular meaning.

"Somehow," Peter said as he fastened it with a Pin underneath his Lapel, "Seventien years seems a shorter time to look back on than to look forward to."

"Well, when we've put twenty-five years of work into it—and that's

NOTHING TO WHAT WE'LL GET INTO THE NEXT SEVENTEEN." LESSING'S TONE KEYED ADMIRABLY WITH THE BRIGHT AMPLE DAY OUTSIDE, THE RAPID GLINT OF THE RAVER AND THE TIPS OF THE MAPLE ALL A-TREMBLE WITH THE URGENCY OF new growth. The senior partner's eye roved from that to the restrained RICHNESS OF THE OFFICE. FURNITURE FROM WHICH THE NEW WAS NOT YET WORN, AND RETURNED TO THE CONTEMPLATION OF THE TOWERING WHITE CLIMILIA.

BEGINNING TO PILE UP BEYOND THE FARTHER BANK OF THE RIVER. "THERE'S NO END TO WHAT A MAN CAN LIFT." HE ASSERTED CONFIDENTLY. "ONCE HE'S GOT his feet under him " "We've carried a lot." Peter assented cheerfully. "And sometimes it

Was rather steep going. But now it's carrying us. The guestion is"— AND HERE HIS VOICE FELL OFF A SHADE AND A SLIGHT GATHERING APPEARED. BETWEEN HIS EYES-"THE REAL QUESTION IS. I SUPPOSE, WHAT IT IS CARRYING. us *to*."

"Where's the good of that?" Julian Protested. "It's only a limitation to SET OUT FOR A PARTICULAR PLACE. THE FUN IS IN THE GOING, YOU KEEP RIGHT ALONG WITH THE PROCESSION UNTIL OLD AGE GETS YOU. THE THING IS JUST TO KEEP IT UP AS LONG AS YOU CAN." HE SWUNG HIMSELF INTO A SITTING POSTURE ON THE FTYCE OF THE DESK AND NOTED THAT THE SUIGHT PLOKER HAD not left his partner's eyes. "What's the idea?" he wished affectionately

to know "Oh, nothing much, but I sort of grew up with the IDEA of Duty— SOMETHING YOU HAD TO DO BECAUSE THERE WAS NOBODY FLISE TO DO IT. YOU HAD NOT ONLY TO DO IT BUT YOU HAD TO LIKE IT. NOT BECAUSE IT WAS LIKABLE, BUT BECAUSE IT WAS YOUR DUTY. IT WAS ALWAYS RIGHT IN FRONT OF

me: I couldn't see over or around it: I just had to do it." "WELL, YOU DID IT." LESSING CORROBORATED, "CLARICE SAYS THE WAY YOU'VE taken care of Fllen----" "AND THE WAY FILEN HAS TAKEN CARE OF ME—BUT THEN FILEN WAS ALL THE WOMAN I HAD." HE CAUGHT HIMSELF UP SWIFTLY AFTER THAT: IT WAS SELDOM

EVEN TO HIS PARTNER THAT ANYTHING ESCAPED HIM IN REFERENCE TO THE INTERIOR LIFE OF DREAMS WHICH HAD GONE ON IN HIM. QUITE HAPPILY BEHIND HIS UNDISTINGUISHED EXTERIOR. "BUT SOMEHOW IT HASN'T SEEMED TO COME

OUT ANYWHERE. I'VE DONE MY DUTY ... AND WHEN I'M DEAD AND ELLEN'S

dead, where is it? After all, what have I done?" "AH, LOOK AT PLEASANTON," JULIAN REMINDED HIM; "DO YOU CALL THAT

NOTHING?" THEY LOOKED TOGETHER TOWARD THE ESPLANADE ALONG THE RIVER.

BEGINNING AT THIS HOLD TO BE FLECKED WITH THE WHITE APPROVS OF NURSE-MAIDS AND THEIR CHARGES. "WE'VE GIVEN THEM CLEAN WATER TO DRINK AND CLEAN STREETS, AND A SAFE PLACE FOR THE CHILDREN TO PLAY IN THE FIGHT WE HAD WITH THE CITY COLLINGLE FOR that I" HE WAVED HIS ARM AGAIN TOWARD. THE WELL-PARKED RIVER FRONT. "EVER SINCE I SOLD YOUR FARM FOR YOU AND YOU BEGAN PUTTING YOUR MONEY INTO THE BUSINESS. WE'VE WALKED RIGHT ALONG WITH IT. EVEN BEFORE YOU LEFT SIEGEL BROTHERS AND WE USED TO SIT. UP NIGHTS WITH THE MAP. PLANNING WHERE TO PUT OUR MONEY LIKE A CHECKER-BOARD. WE SAW THINGS LIKE THIS FOR THE TOWN, AND NOW WE'VE

MADE 'EM TRUE AND YOU SAY WE'VE DONE NOTHING!" THE SENIOR PARTNER was touched a little in his tenderest susceptibilities. "OH, WELL." PETER ADMITTED WITH A SHAMED LAUGH, "I SUPPOSE MAN IS AN INCLIRABLE EGOTIST. I WAS THINKING OF SOMETHING MORE PERSONAL. SOMETHING MINE. THE WAY A BOOK OR A PICTURE BELONGS TO THE MAN WHO makes it."

"THE GAME ISN'T OVER YET." LESSING REMINDED HIM, WITH A GLANCE AT THE UNFOLDING BUD WHICH CLARICE HAD SENT AS A SYMBOL OF THE OPENING YEAR: "YOU'RE ONLY FORTY, AND, ANYWAY, THE MONEY'S YOURS: YOU MADE IT." SOMETHING IN THE WORD RECALLED HIM TO A THOUGHT THAT HAD IN HIS MIND. "CLARICE WANTED ME TO ASK YOUTO-DAY IF YOU HAD ANY IDEA. how much you are worth."

BEEN FARLIER PETER'S ATTENTION CAME BACK FROM THE WINDOW WITH A START, "DOES THAT MEAN THE FRESH AIR FUND OR THE ASSOCIATION FOR THE PROTECTION OF Ownerless Pups?" JULIAN GRINNED. "OWNERLESS BACHELORS RATHER. CLARICE HAS AN IDEA YOU

are well enough off to marry." "IF IT WERE A PROPOSITION OF MY BEING MARRIED TO CLARGE I SHOULD

CONSIDER MYSELF WELL ENDUGH OFF WITHOUT ANYTHING FLSE---- " PETER DROPPED THE LIGHT, ACCUSTOMED BANTER FOR A SOBER TONE. "HOW WILL OFF does your wife think I ought to be?"

"SHE'S GOT IT FIGURED OUT THAT ALL YOU'VE SPENT ON MAKING ELLEN

woman happy."

"Look here, Julian, *is* it an object for a man to live for, making some woman happy?"

"Well, it keeps you on the jump all right," Lessing assured him. "What his so is there? It's a way or making you right in happy when you come to

COMFORTABLE FOR LIFE ISN'T A PATCH ON WHAT SHE AND THE BOYS COST ME, SO IT'S HIGH TIME YOU SET ABOUT YOUR NATURAL DESTINY OF MAKING SOME

LOOK AT IT; KEEPING HER AND THE KIDS SO THAT YOU LEAVE THE WORLD BETTER

OFF THAN YOU FOUND IT. IT SUITS Me." HE WAS LOOKING, INDEED, PARTICULARLY WELL SUITED, IN SPITE OF A DISPOSITION TO PORTILINESS AND A SUSPICION OF THINNING HAIR, WITH WHAT THE SEVENTEEN YEARS JUST PAST HAD BROUGHT HIM. A WARM APPRECIATION OF WHAT THOSE THINGS WERE TOUCHED HIS REGARD FOR HIS COMPANION WITH A SOBER AFFECTIONATENESS. "I RECKON CLARGE IS RIGHT: A WIFE AND A COURLE OF KIDS IS THE PRESCRIPTION FOR YOUR CASE. THAT'S WHY SHE WANTED ME TO REMIND YOU THAT YOU COULD AFFORD 'PM."

"Oh, I say, Weatheral----"
"MY DEAR JULIAN, IF I HADN'T BEEN ABLE TO SEE WHAT CLARICE HAS BEEN UP

"And has she named the day?" Peter wished to know whimsically.

TO FOR THE LAST SIX MONTHS, AT LEAST I COULD HAVE DEPENDED ON ELLEN TO see it for me."

"She doesn't object, does she?"

"OH, IF YOU THINK THE PRIVILEGE OF BBING AUNT TO YOUR CHILDREN HAS MADE up to her for not being aunt to mine——"

"THE PRIVILEGE IS ON THE OTHER SIDE. BUT ANYWAY, I'M GLAD YOU GOT ON TO it. I didn't want to be a spoil sport. I suppose women's instincts can be

TRUSTED IN THESE THINGS, BUT I HATED TO SEE CLARICE COMING IT OVER YOU blind."

PETER WONDERED TO HIMSELF A LITTLE, WHICH OF THE CHARMING LADIES TO

HE WASN'T. HOWEVER, CONCERNED ABOUT HER COMING IT BLIND OVER ANYBODY BUT THE SENIOR PARTNER WHO GOT DOWN NOW FROM THE DESK. WHISTLING SOFTLY AND WALKING WITH A WIDE STEP AS A MAN WILL IN JUNE WHEN AFFAIRS GO WELL WITH HIM. AND HE FEELS THAT IF THERE ARE STILL SOME things which he desires he is able to get them for himself. "DON'T FORGET YOU'RE COMING TO US ON SATURDAY; AND WE DINE TOGETHER to-night as usual." "As usual." Always on the anniversary of their beginning business TOGETHER WEATHERAL AND LESSING, WHO WERE STILL, IN SPITE OF SEEING ONE ANOTHER DAILY FOR SEVENTEEN YEARS, ABLE TO BE INTERESTED IN ONE ANOTHER, DINED APART FROM THEIR FAMILIES, SAVOURING PLEASANTLY THAT ESSENTIAL ESSENCE OF MALENESS. THE MUTUAL POWER OF WORK WELL ACCOMPLISHED. IT WAS THE BEST TRIBUTE THAT CLARGE AND ELLEN COULD PAY TO THE OCCASION THAT THEY UNDERSTOOD THAT, MUCH AS THEIR SEVERAL LIVES HAD PROFITED BY THE PARTNERSHP. THEY WERE STILL AND NATURALLY OUTSIDE OF it. On this occasion, however, it was impossible for Peter to keep Mrs. LESSING OUT OF THE BACKGROUND OF HIS CONSCIOUSNESS, BECAUSE OF THE PART HER SUGGESTION OF THE MORNING PLAYED IN NEW REALIZATION OF HIMSELF AS THE RICH MR. WEATHERAL OF PLEASANTON, HE CREDITED HER WITH SUFFICIENT KNOWLEDGE OF HIS CHARACTER TO HAVE EGGED JULIAN ON TO THE REMINDER AS A PART OF THE GAME SHE HAD PLAYED WITH HIM FOR THE PAST. TWO OR THREE YEARS, BY WHICH PETER WAS TO BE INSTATED IN A LIFE MORE IN keeping with his opportunities. IT WAS A GAME CLARICE PLAYED WITH LIFE EVERYWHERE, COAXING IT TO YIELD ITS CHOICEST BLOOM TO HER. SHE HAD AN INSTINCT FOR CHOICENESS LIKE A HUMMNGBIRD, DARTING HERE AND THERE FOR SWEETNESS. HER FLUTTERINGS WERE NEVER OF UNCERTAINTY BUT SUCH AS KEPT HER IN THE PERFECT AIRY POISE. IF SHE WANTED MARRIAGE FOR PETER IT WAS BECAUSE SHE COULD

IMAGINE NOTHING BETTER FOR ANYBODY THAN A MARRIAGE LIKE HERS, AND IF SHE CHOSE THIS TIME FOR LETTING HIM KNOW THAT SHE WAS THINKING OF IT. IT

WHOM HE HAD BEEN INTRODUCED LATELY. CLARGE HAD SELECTED FOR HIM.

WAS BECAUSE IN THOSE TERMS SHE COULD BRING CLOSEST TO HIM HIS NEW-FOUND POSSIBILITIES. IF SHE COULD HAVE REACHED PETER WITH THE PERSONAL CERTAINTY OF RICHES BY EXPLAINING TO HIM HOW FAR HIS DOLLARS WOULD STRETCH END TO END. OR HOW MANY ACRES OF POSTAGE STAMPS HE COULD BUY WITH THEM. SHE MIGHT HAVE THOUGHT LESS OF HIM ON THAT ACCOUNT. BUT SHE WOULD HAVE HELPED HIM TO UNDERSTANDING EVEN ON THOSE TERMS. YOU COULDN'T HAVE MADE CLARICE LESSING BELIEVE THAT WHATEVER THER LIMITATIONS. PEOPLE WERBYT ENTITLED TO HELP SIMPLY BECAUSE THEY needed it IT HAD COME UPON PETER BY LEAPS AND BOUNDS DURING THE LAST TWO OR THREE YEARS. BOTH THE WEALTH AND THE NECESSITY OF PUTTING IT TO HIMSELF IN TERMS OF PERSONAL EXPRESSION. DURING THE FIRST TEN YEARS OF THE PARTNERSHP. THE ONLY USE FOR MONEY THE SIMPLE NEEDS OF ELLEN AND HIMSELF HAD ESTABLISHED WAS TO PUT IT BACK INTO THE BUSINESS: A USE WHICH HAD BECOME ALMOST AN OBLIGATION DURING THE TIME WHEN BOTH CHLDREN AND OPPORTUNITY WERE COMING TO JULIAN FASTER THAN THE CASH TO

MEET THEM. IT WAS DUE TO THE HIGH GROUND THAT CLARICE HAD MADE FOR THEM ALL OUT OF WHAT SHE AND THE CHLIDREN STOOD FOR, THAT PETER'S SUPERIOR CASH CONTRIBUTION TO THE FIRM HAD BECOME A FRIVILEGE. THEY had had, he and Ellen, their stringent occasions; it had been Clarice's PART TO SEE THAT SINCE THEY BNOURED THE PINCH OF FOVERTY THEY SHOULD AT LEAST GET SOMETHING HUMAN OUT OF IT. IT CAME OUT FOR PETER PLEASANTLY AS HE WALKED HOME THROUGH THE MILD JUNE EVENING, JUST HOW MUCH THEY HAD HAD. MUCH, MUCH MORE THAN THEY WOULD HAVE BEEN ABLE TO

THEY HAD HAD. MUCH, MUCH MORE THAN THEY WOULD HAVE BEEN ABLE TO BUY WITH THE MONEY THEY MICHT IN STRICT EQUITY HAVE WITHDRAWN FROM THE BUSINESS. NOTHING, HE HAD LONG ADMITTED, THAT HE COULD HAVE PURCHASED FOR HIS SISTER WOULD HAVE BEEN SO SATISFYING AS WHAT CLARICE CONTRIBUTED, PRESSING THE RULL CUP OF HER MOTHER-HOOD TO ELLEN'S THIRSTY LIPS. THEY MIGHT HAVE GROWN SLEEK, HE AND ELLEN, WITHOUT

EXCEEDING A PROPER RATIO OF EXPENDITURE, AND IF IN THE BND THEY HAD BEEN A LITTLE LESS RICH, THEY WOULD STILL HAVE HAD BNOUGH TO GO ON BEING SLEEK AND COMFORTABLE TO THE BND. THAT HE WAS STILL FIT, AS MRS.

LESSING'S TRANSPARENT EFFORTS TO MARRY HIM TO HER FRIENDS GLARANTIEED him to be, HE FELT WAS OWING GREATLY TO THE TERMS ON WHICH CLARGE HAD

FITNESS WAS REQUIRED FOR ADMISSION TO MRS. LESSING'S ORGLE HE WOULD. HAVE GLESSED EVEN WITHOUT THE AID OF PRINT WHICH CONSISTENTLY DESCRIBED IT AS OUR BEST SCOIETY, FOR IT WAS A BEST ATTESTED TO BY ALL THE MARKS BY WHICH CLARICE HERSELF EXPRESSED THE ESSENTIAL FINENESS. of things. ONE COULDN'T HAVE TOLD. FROM ANYTHING THAT APPEARED ON THE SURFACE OF

ADMITTED HIM TO THE ADVENTURE OF BRINGING UP A FAMILY. THAT A SPECIAL

THE LESSING'S SOCIAL ENVIRONMENT, THAT LIFE DID NOT PROCEED THERE AS IT DID BETWEEN CLARICE AND THE WEATHERALS. BY MEANS OF ITS SUBTLER SYMPATHES, AND PROCEED, AT LEAST SO FAR AS THE WOMEN WERE CONCERNED. ON A STILL HIGHER PLANE OF GRACE AND HARWONY. IT MOVED ABOUT HER TABLE AND ACROSS THE LAWNS OF LESSING'S HANDSOME COUNTRY

PLACE. WITH SUCH SOUNDLESS EASE AND PERFECTION AS IT HAD GLIDED FOR PETER THROUGH THE HOUSE WITH THE SHINING WALLS. OR AT LEAST SO IT HAD SEEMED ON THOSE OCCASIONS DURING THE LAST FEW YEARS WHEN HE HAD found himself wondrously inside it. IT HAD BEEN ACCEPTED BY ELLEN ON THE MERE CERTAINTY OF CLARICE'S

MOTHER HAVING BEEN ONE OF THE THATCHER INWOODS, THAT CLARICE SHOULD ENLARGE HER SOCIAL BORDERS WITH LESSING'S INCREASING MEANS UNTIL THEY INCLUDED PEOPLE AMONG WHOM ELLEN WOULD HAVE BEEN MISERABLY SHY AND OUT OF TUNE. BUT NOT ELLEN HERSELF GLESSED HOW MUCH OF PETER'S ADMISSION TO ITS INACCESSIBILITY WAS OWING TO THE RETURNS FROM HARDLY SNATCHED OPTIONS AND LONG-NURSED OPPORTUNITIES. COMING IN IN CHECKS OF SIX FIGURES. PERHAPS CLARICE HERSELF NEVER KNEW. IT WAS ONE OF THE

THINGS THAT WENT WITH BEING A THATCHER INWOOD, WHEREVER AN OCCASION

PRESENTED A HANDLE OF NOBILITY. TO SEIZE BY THAT AND MAINTAIN IT IN THE FACE OF ANY CONTINGENT SMALLNESS. CLARICE WOLLDN'T HAVE INTRODUCED PETER TO HER FRIBNDS IF HE HADN'T BEEN FIT. AND IT WAS PART OF THE SOCIAL

CREED OF WOMEN LIKE CLARICE LESSING, WHICH TAKES ALMOST THE

AUTHORITY OF RELIGION. THAT HE WOULDN'T HAVE BEEN IN A POSITION TO BE

INTRODUCED IF HE HADN'T BEEN FIT. SO IT HAD HAPPENED FOR THE PAST TWO YEARS THAT PETER HAD FOUND HIMSELF SKIRTING THE FRINGE OF BEST SOCIETY.

AND IDENTIFYING IT WITH THE LIFE HE HAD LIVED SO LONG. SITTING WITH HIS BOOK OPEN ON HIS KNEES IN THEIR LITTLE FLAT, WITH ELLEN ACROSS THE FIRE FROM HIM KNITTING WHITE THINGS FOR JULIAN'S CHILDREN. BUT THE IDEA THAT HAVING COME INTO THIS NEIGHBOURHOOD OF FINE APPRECIATIONS HE WAS TO TAKE UP HIS HOME AND LIVE THERE, OPENED MORE SLOWLY. IT REQUIRED MORE THAN ONE OF CLARICE'S SWIFT HUMMINGBIRD DARTS. MORE THAN THE flutter of suggestion to brush its petals awake for him. It lay so deep under all the years, the power of loving. He knew almost NOTHING ABOUT IT EXCEPT THAT HE HAD HAD IT ONCE, AND THAT MARRIAGE WITHOUT IT WOULD BE UNTHINKABLE. EVEN SUCH A MARRIAGE AS MRS.

LESSING HAD LET HIM SEE WAS NOW POSSIBLE TO HIM. SHE HAD CALLED WITH ALL HER DELICATE FRIBNDLY SKILL. ON SOMETHING WHICH ONLY NOW UNDER THAT SUMMONS HE BEGAN TO MISS. IT WAS LIKE A LOST WORD IN EVERY SENTENCE IN WHICH THE ORDINARY HOPES OF MEN ARE TO BE READ. AND HE FELT THAT UNTIL HE FOUND IT AGAIN ALL THE HELP MRS. LESSING COULD AFFORD HIM WOULD NOT ENABLE HIM TO THINK OF MARRIAGE AS A THING DESIRABLE IN ITSELF. IT WAS MISSING IN HIM STILL. WHEN HE CAME THAT NIGHT RATHER LATE TO THE APARTMENT WHERE ONLY THE JAPANESE HOUSEBOY AWAITED HIM. ONE

OF THE FIRST THINGS HE HAD DONE FOR ELLEN WITH HIS INCREASING MEANS. HAD BEEN TO BUY BACK FOR HER THE HOUSE AT BUCOMBURY WITH THE GARDEN. travelled from her. It had been understood from the beginning that she heard in the new gracious existence than in the House where she had

AND A BIT OF THE ORCHARD. SHE HAD BEEN THERE NOW SINCE DECORATION Day, retiring more and more into the kindly village life as a point of VANTAGE FROM WHICH TO MARK WITH PRIDE THE SOCIAL DISTANCE THAT PETER WASN'T TO GO WITH HM. THE TAPPING OF HER CRUTCH WAS NO MORE TO BE NEVER FOLLOWED HIM. LIFE FOR ELLEN WAS LIVED CLOSE AT HAND. THERE WERE HOLLYHOOKS AND CURRANT BUSHES IN HER GARDEN AND JULIAN'S CHILDREN overran it. IT WAS NOT FILEN THEN THAT PETER MISSED AS HE SAT ALONE IN THE HOUSE THAT NIGHT WITH HIS BACK TO THE LOWERED LIGHT AND HIS GAZE SEEKING THE RIVER AND THE FLITTING SHAPES OF BOATS THAT WENT UP AND DOWN ON IT. FREIGHTED WITH YOUNG VOICES AND LAUGHTER. HE MISSED THE LOVELY LADY. HE KNEW NOW WHY HE HAD NOT BEEN ABLE TO THINK OF MARRIAGE IN THE

WAY CLARGE HELD IT OUT TO HIM. AS A HAPPY CONTINGENCY OF HIS NOW.

thought of her clearly for a long time. THERE HAD BEEN A PERIOD IN THE BEGINNING OF HIS LIFE WITH ELLEN. WHEN THE LADY OF HIS DREAMS HAD BEEN SO NEAR THE SURFACE OF ALL HIS THINKING THAT SHE TOOK ON FORM AND LIKENESS FROM ANYTHING THAT WAS LOVELY AND YOUNG IN HIS NEIGHBOURHOOD, BUT AS THINGS LOVELY AND YOUNG DRIFTED FROM HIM WITH THE YEARS; AND AS THE BUSINESS TOOK DEEPER AND DEEPER HOLD ON HIS ATTENTION. SHE HAD BECOME A MERE FLOATING figment, a live fluttering spark in the very core of all his imaginings.

WAS BECAUSE HE HAD NOT

BRING AS RICH AS HE HAD INTENDED TO BE IT

SHE HAD BEEN BESIDE HIM. A PLEASANT. INDETERMINATE PRESENCE IN THE LONG JOURNEY SHE TRAVELLED FROM THE PRINTED PAGE TO THE ACCOMPANYING CLICK OF ELLEN'S NEEDLES. SOMETIMES AT THE OPERA SHE TOOK ON A GOSSAMER TINT FROM THE SINGER'S FACE, AND LONGER AGO THAN HE COULD AFFORD OPERAS. HE HAD UNDERSTOOD THAT ALL THE BEAUTY OF THE WORLD.

BURSTING APPLE BLDS. THE GREAT CURVE OF THE SURF THAT SET THE BEACHES TREVBLING, DERIVED SOMEHOW ITS PERTINENCE FROM HER. NOW AT THE AGE of forty he had ceased to think very much about the Lovely Lady. IT COOLERRED TO HIM THAT THIS MIGHT HAVE SOMETHING TO DO WITH HIS FAILURE to get a new relation to life out of his new wealth.

IT HAD STRUCK PETER RATHER FORLORNLY DURING THE PAST FEW YEARS THAT THERE WAS LITTLE USE HE COULD PUT MONEY TO, EXCEPT TO MAKE MORE MONEY. HE

COULD SEE BY TURNING HIS HEAD TO THE ROOM BEHIND HIM HOW LITTLE THERE WAS THERE OF WHAT HE HAD FANCIED ONCE RICHES WOULD BRING HIM. THE LINES OF THE ROOM WERE GOOD, THE AMOUNT OF THE ANNUAL RENT ASSURED THAT TO HIM. THE FURNITURE WAS GOOD AND THE RUGS EXPENSIVE. ELLEN BELIEVED THAT MONEY IN RUGS WAS A GOOD INVESTMENT. PARTICULARLY IF THE COLOURS WERE STRONG AND WOULD STAND FADING. THERE WERE SOME CHOICE THINGS HERE AND THERE, A VASE AND PICTURES WHICH PETER HAD

CHOSEN FOR HIMSELF. THOUGH HE WAS AWARE. AS HE TOOK THEM IN UNDER THE DULL GLOW, THAT ELLEN HAD ARRANGED THEM IN STRICT REFERENCE TO THE SIZE OF THE FRAMES. AND THAT THE WHOLE EFFECT FAILED OF SATISFACTION. HE THOUGHT HIS LIFE MIGHT BE SOMEWHAT LIKE THAT ROOM. FULL OF GOOD THINGS.

BUT LACKING TH	THE TOUCH THAT SHOULD SET THEM IN FRUTTPUL ORDER. IT ST	TOLE OVER
him as persi	suasively as the warm growing SMELL OF THE PARK B	BLOW HIM
THAT THE SOME	METHING MISSED MIGHT BE THE TOUCH AND PRESENCE OF TH	Æ
Lovely Lady.		

IT WAS THE LATE BND OF THE AFTERNOON WHEN PETER STEPPED OFF THE TRAIN AT THE LESSING'S STATION AND INTO THE TRAIP THAT WAS WAITING FOR HIM. HE LEARNED FROM LESSING'S MAIN THAT THE FAMILY HAD BEEN KEPT BY THE TENNIS MATCH AT MAPLEWONT AND HE WAS TO COME ON TO THE HOUSE AT HIS LESURE. THAT BEING THE CASE, PETER TOOK THE REINS HIMSELF AND MADE A LONG DETIOUR THROUGH THE DUST-SMELLING COUNTRY ROADS, SO THAT IT WAS QUITE SIX WHEN HE REACHED THE HOUSE, AND EVERYBODY DRESSING for the early dinner.

for the early dinner.

HE MADE SO HASTY A CHANGE HIMSELF IN HIS FEAR OF BEING LATE, THAT WHEN HE CAME DOWN TO THE LIVING-ROOM IN A QUARTIER OF AN HOUR THERE WAS NO ONE THERE TO MEET HIM. ABSORBED PARTICLES OF THE BRIGHT DAY GAVE OFF IN THE DUSK AND MADE IT GOLDEN. THERE WERE HONEYSUCKLES ON THE PERSOLA OUTSIDE, AND IN THE ROOM BEYOND A GIRL SINGING A QUIET AIR HALF-TRILLED AND HALF-FORGOTTEN. HE HEARD THE SINGER MOVING TOWARD HIM THROUGH THE VACANT HOUSE, OF WHICH THE DOORS STOOD OPEN TO THE EVENING COOLNESS, AND THE CLOCK OF THE ELECTRIC BUTTON AS SHE PASSED, AND SAW THE ROOMS BURST ONE BY ONE INTO THE BLOOM OF SHADED LIGHTS.
SO SHE CAME, BUSY WITH THE HUMMED FRAGMENTS OF HER SONGS, AND TURNED THE LOT PETER BEFORE SHE WAS AWARE OF HIM, BUT SHE

"You must be Mr. Weatheral," She said. "Mrs. Lessing sent me to say she expected you. I am Miss Goodward."

was not half so much disconcerted

SHE GAVE HIM HER HAND FOR A GRACIOUS MOMENT BEFORE SHE TURNED TO WHAT HAD BROUGHT HER SO EARLY DOWN, THE ARRANGEMENT OF TWO GREAT BOWLS OF WILD FERNS AND VINES WHICH A SERVANT HAD JUST PLACED ON either end of the low mantlepiece.

"WE BROUGHT THEM IN FROM ARCHER'S GLEN ON THE WAY HOME," SHE TOLD HIM OVER HER SHOULDER, HER HANDS BUSY WITH DEFT, QUICK TOUCHES. SHE WAS ALL IN WHITE, WHICH TOOK A PEARLY LUSTRE FROM THE LAMPS, AND FOR THE MOMENT SHE WAS AS BEAUTIFUL AS PETER BELIEVED HER. A TINY UNFINISHED. PHRASE OF THE SONG FLOATED HALF CONSCIOUSLY FROM HER LIPS AS A BLIBBLE "They look better so, don't you think?" As she stood off to measure THE EFFECT. IT SEEMED TO PETER THAT THE SPIRIT OF THE HOUSE HAD received him; it was so men dream of home-coming, without sensible displacement of a life going on in it, lovely and secure, as a bark slips INTO SOME STILL POOL TO ITS MOORINGS. HE YIELDED HIMSELF NATURALLY TO THE IMPERSONAL INTIMACY OF HER WELCOME AND ALL THE SORDID WAYS OF HIS LIFE. led up to her. IT WAS NOT ALL AT ONCE HE SAW IT SO. HE KEPT WATCHING HER ALL THAT EVENING AS ONE WATCHES A PERFECT THING, A BIRD OR A DANCER, SENSING IN THE SLIM TURN OF HER ANKLE. THE LITHE THROAT. THE DELICATE PERFUVE THAT SHE SHOOK FROM HER SLIMMER DRAPERIES. SO MANY STROKES OF A MASTER HAND. SHE WAS EVIDENTLY ON TERMS WITH THE LESSINGS WHICH PERMITTED.

HER ACCEPTANCE OF HIM AT THE FAMILY VALUATION, BUT THE PERFECTION OF HER METHOD WAS SLICH THAT IT NEVER QUITE SLINK HIS IDENTITY AS THE JUNIOR partner in his character of Uncle Peter. THS WAS A NUANCE, IF PETER HAD BUT KNOWN IT, WHICH EUNICE GOODWARD COULD HAVE NO MORE MISSED THAN SHE COULD HAVE EATEN WITH HER KNIFE. SHE HAD BEEN TRAINED TO THE FINER SOCIAL ADJUSTMENTS.

AS TO A CULT: CLARICE'S GAME OF PERSUADING LIFE TO PRESENT ITSELF WITH A SMLING COUNTENANCE, PLAYED ALL IN THE KEY OF PERSONAL RELATIONS. IT WAS AS IF NATURE. HAVING TRIED HER HAND AT A GREAT MANY ORDINARY PERSONS. EACH WITH ONE GIFT OF SYMPATHY OR GRACIOUSNESS. HAD CULLED AND COMPACTED THE BEST OF THEM INTO EUNICE GOODWARD: WHICH WAS PRECISELY THE CASE EXCEPT THAT PETER THROUGH HIS UNFAMILIARITY WITH THE

BEST SOCIETY COLLON'T BE EXPECTED TO KNOW THAT THE INTELLIGENCE WHICH HAD PUT TOGETHER SO MUCH PERFECTIVESS WAS NO LESS CALCULATING THAN

THAT WHICH GOES TO THE MATCHING OF A STRING OF PEARLS. ALL THAT HE GOT

FROM IT WAS PRECISELY ALL THAT HE WAS MEANT TO RECEIVE-NAMELY. THE CONVICTION THAT SHE COLLIDN'T HAVE CHARMED HIM SO HAD SHE NOT BEEN

altogether charming.

AND AS YET HE DID NOT KNOW WHAT HAD HAPPENED TO HIM. HE THOUGHT. WHEN HE AWOKE IN THE MORNING TO A NEW REALIZATION OF THE SATISFACTORINESS OF LIVING. THAT THE FRESH AIR HAD DONE IT. THE BREATH OF THE NEARBY UNTRIMMED FOREST, THE LOOSE-LEAVED ROSES PRESSED AGAINST the pane beginning to give off warm opours in the sun. Then he came OUT ON THE TERRACE AND SAW EUNICE GOODWARD, LOOKING LIKE A THIN SUP. OF THE MORNING HERSELF. IN A BLUE DRESS BUTTONED CLOSE TO HER FIGURE WITH WIDE WHITE BUTTONS AND A TINY FROTH OF WHITE AT THE SHORT SLEEVES AND OPEN THROAT. ACROSS HER BOSOM IT WAS CAUGHT WITH A BLUE STONE SET IN DULL SILVER, WHICH SERVED ALSO TO HOLD IN PLACE A ROSE THAT MATCHED THE MORNING TINT OF HER SKIN. SHE WAS TALKING WITH THE LESSINGS' CHAUFFEUR AS PETER CAME UP WITH HER AND ALL HER ACCENTS. WERE OF DISMAY. THEY WERE TO HAVE DRIVEN OVER TO MAPLEMONT THAT AFTERNOON, SHE EXPLAINED TO PETER, FOR THE LAST OF THE TENNIS SETS, AND NOW GILMORE HAD JUST TOLD HER THAT THE CAR MUST GO TO THE SHOP FOR TWO OR THREE DAYS. SHE WAS SO MUCH MORE CHARMING IN THE WAY SHE FORGAVE GILMORE FOR HER EVIDENT DISAPPOINTMENT THAT HE. BEING A YOUNG MAN AND TROUBLED BY A SENSE OF MORAL RESPONSIBILITY, WAS QUITE overcome by it.

"But, nonsense"; Peter was certain "there is always something can be done to cars." There was, Glimore assured him, but it took time to do it, and to-morrow would be Sunday. "If you'd only thought to come down in the motor yourself, sir..........." The chalffelr reproached him. The truth was that Peter hadn't a car of his own and Glimore knew it. There was an electric runabout which had gone down to Bloombury with Ellen, and a serviceable roadster which was part of the office equipment, but the rich Mr. Weatheral had never taken the pans to

WITH ELLEN, AND A SERVICEABLE ROADSTER WHICH WAS PART OF THE OFFICE EQUIPMENT, BUT THE RICH MR. WEATHERAL HAD NEVER TAKEN THE PAINS TO OWN A FRIVATE CAR. NOW, AS HE HASTILY DREW OUT HS WATCH, IT COCURRED TO HIM THAT LESSING'S CHAUFFELR WAS A FELLOW OF MORE PERSPOUNTY THAN HE HAD GIVEN HIM CREDIT FOR. THE TWO MEN COMMUNICATED WORDLESSLY across the cool width of the terrace steps.

"AT WHAT HOUR." PETER WISHED TO KNOW. "WOULD WE HAVE TO LEAVE HERE

TO REACH MARLEMONT IN GOOD TIME? THEN IF YOU CAN BE READY TO LEAVE THE MOMENT MY CAR GETS HERE...." HE EXCUSED HIMSELF TO GO TO THE TELEPHONE: HALF AN HOUR LATER WHEN HE JOINED THE FAMILY AT BREAKFAST HE had discovered some of the things that, besides making more money with it, can be done with money.

The knowledge suited him like his own garwent, as if it had been LYING READY FOR HIM TO PUT ON WHEN THE OCCASION REQUIRED IT. AND NOW BECAME HIM ADMIRABLY. HE PERCEIVED IT TO BE A PROPER MALE FLINCTION. TO PRODUCE EASILY AND WITH PRECISION WHATEVER UTTERLY CHARMING YOUNG LADIES MIGHT REASONABLY REQUIRE. HE APPRECIATED MISS GOODWARD'S ACCEPTANCE OF IT AS SHE CAME DOWN FROM THE HOUSE BEWILDERINGLY TIED. INTO SOFT VEILS FOR THE AFTERNOON'S DRIVE. AS A PART OF HER HALL-MARKED FINENESS. IF SHE COULDN'T HELP KNOWING, TAKING IN THE CAR'S GLITTERING NEWNESS FROM POINT TO POINT. THAT ITS MAGNIFICENCE HAD MATERIALIZED OUT OF HER SIMPLE WISH FOR IT. SHE AT LEAST DIDN'T ALLOW HIM TO THINK IT WAS ANY MORE THAN SHE WOULD HAVE EXPECTED OF HIM. SO COMPLETELY DID HE YIELD HIMSELF TO THIS NEW SENSE OF THE FITNESS OF THINGS THAT IT CAME AS A SHOCK TO HAVE HER. AS SOON AS THEY HAD JOINED THEMSELVES TO THE HOLIDAY-COLOURED CROWD THAT STREAMED AND SHIFTED UNDER THE BRIGHT BOUGHS OF MAPLEMONT, REFT FROM HIM BY FRIENDLY, COMPELLING voices, and particularly by Burton Henderson, who played singles and

WENT ABOUT BAREHFADED AND SINGUARLY SELE-POSSESSED. IT WAS UNTHINKABLE TO PETER THAT, IN VIEW OF HER RECENTLY DISCOVERED IMPORTANCE IN PUTTING HIM AT RIGHTS WITH HIMSELF. THAT HE HADN'T ARRANGED WITH HER THAT THEY WERE TO BE MORE TOGETHER. FOR THE MOMENT IT WAS ALMOST A DEROCATION OF HER CHARM THAT SHE SHOULDN'T HERSELF HAVE RECOGNIZED BY SOME OVERT ACT HER EXTRAORDINARY OPPORTUNITY AND THEN IN A MOMENT MORE HE PERCEIVED THAT SHE HAD. RECOGNIZED IT. HE HAD ONLY TO WAIT, AS HE SAW, AND HE WOULD FIND HIMSELF PLEASANTLY BESIDE HER. AND AT EACH RENEWAL OF THE EXCLUDING COMPANIONSHIP, HE WAS MORE SUBTLY AWARE THAT IT WAS ACCORDED NOT to anything he was but to what she had it in her power so beautifully to make of him. SO PERFECTLY DID SHE STRIKE THE KEY WITH HIM, WHEN, IN THE INTERVALS OF THE AFTERNOON'S ENTERTAINMENT THEY FOUND THEMSELVES SITTING OR WALKING

NOT EVEN IN A RATHER LONG SESSION AFTER TEA WITH BURTON HENDERSON AMONG THE RHODODENDRONS. IN WHICH IT WAS APPARENT FROM THE YOUNG MAN'S MANNER THAT SHE HADN'T AT LEAST BEEN IN TUNE WITH HIM. IT OCCURRED JUST AS THEY WERE LEAVING AND SERVED IN THE FLUTTER OF DELAY IT OCCASIONED TO FIX THE ATTENTION OF ALL THEIR PARTY ON EUNICE COMING OUT. OF THE SHRUBBERY WITH YOUNG HENDERSON IN HER WAKE, BATTING AIMLESSLY AT THE GRASS-TOPS WITH THE RACQUET WHICH HE STILL CARRIED. THERE WAS AN AIR OF SULKINESS ABOUT HIM WHICH CAUSED MRS. LESSING ENIGNATICALLY TO SAY THAT ELINICE WAS ALTOGETHER TOO GOOD TO THAT YOUNG MAN. TO WHICH LESSING'S "WELL. IF SHE IS. HE DOESN'T SEEM TO APPREDIATE." SERVED ALSO TO CONFIRM PETER IN THE ROLE WHICH THE EFFECT SHE PRODUCED. ON HIMSELE HAD OREATED FOR HIM. HE AT LEAST APPRECIATED THE WAY IN WHICH SHE HAD MADE HIM FEEL HIMSELF THE DISTRIBUTER OF BENEFITS. TO A degree which made it almost obligatory of her to go on with it. SUCCESSFULLY AS MISS GOODWARD HAD KEPT FOR PETER DURING THE DAY HIS NEW RELATION TO HIS WEALTH ON THE ONE HAND AND SOCIETY ON THE OTHER SHE SEEMED THAT EVENING QUITE TO HAVE ABANDONED HIM. WHILE THE FAMILY WAS HAVING COFFEE ON THE TERRACE AFTER DINNER, SHE SLIPPED AWAY FROM THEM TO REAPPEAR LOWER DOWN AMONG THE ROSE TREES. HER WHITE DRESS GATHERING ALL THAT WAS LEFT OF THE LINGERING GLOW. THE JUNIOR PARTNER, FEELING HIMSELF NEVER SO MUCH JUNIOR. THOUGH HE KNEW IT WAS BUT A SCANT YEAR OR TWO. SAT ON THROUGH LESSING'S INCONSEQUENTIAL COMMENT ON BUSINESS AND THE DAY'S ADVENTURES. HEARING NOT A WORD: NOW AND THEN HIS CHAIR CREAKED WITH THE INTENSITY OF HIS PRECOCUPATION. IT GREW DUSK AND THE LAMPS BLOSSOMED IN THE HOUSE BEHIND THEM: PRESENTLY CLARICE SLIPPED AWAY TO THE CHILDREN AND THE EVENING DAMP FELL OVER THE ROSE GARDEN. PETER COLLD ENDURE IT NO LONGER. HE BELIEVED AS HE ROSE SUDDBNLY WITH A STRETCHING MOVEMENT THAT HE MEANT MERRLY TO RELIEVE THE TENSION OF SITTING BY PACING UP AND

DOWN; IT WAS UNACCOUNTABLE THEREFORE THAT HE SHOULD FIND HIMSELF AT THE EDGE OF THE TERRACE. HE WONDERED WHY ON EARTH CLARICE COULDN'T HAVE HELPED HIM A LITTLE, AND THEN AS IF IN RESPONSE TO HIS DEEP INSTRUCTIVE DEWAND LIPON HER. HE HEARD HER CALL SOFTLY TO HER HUSBAND.

TOGETHER. THAT HE COULD NOT HAVE IMAGINED HER TO HAVE BEEN OUT OF IT.

FROM THE DOOR OF THE HOUSE. AT THE SCRAFE OF JULIAN'S CHAIR ON THE TERRACE TILING, PETER CAST AWAY HIS CIGAR AND HURRIED INTO THE DUSK OF the garden.

HE FOUND HER AT LAST BY THE HERBACIOUS BORDER. KEEPING TOUCH WITH THE

FLIGHT OF A SPHINK-HEAD MOTH ALONG THE TALL WHITE ROCKETS OF PHLOX.

PETER WHIPPED OUT HIS HANDKERCHEF AND DROPPED IT DEFTLY OVER THE
FLUTTERING WINGS. IN A MOMENT HE HAD STILLED THEM IN HIS HAND. MISS

"HE'S NOT HURT...." PETER LAID THE MOTH GENTLY ON A FEATHERY FLOWER HEAD, AND THE TINY WHISPERING WHIRR BEGAN AGAIN. "I THOUGHT YOU WANTED

Goodward cried out to him:
"You've spoiled his happy evening!"

him "

"I DD—BUT NOT TO CATCH HIM," MISS GOODWARD EXPLAINED. "I WANTED just to want him."

"AH, I'M AFRAID I'M ONE OF THOSE PEOPLE WITH WHOM TO WANT A THING IS TO go after it," Peter justified himself.

"SO ONE GATHERS FROM WHAT ONE HEARS." SHE BRUSHED HIM AS LICHTLY

WITH THE COMPLIMENT AS WITH THE WINGS OF A MOTH. "I WASN'T REALLY
WANTING HIM SO MUCH AS I WAS WANTING TO be HIM FOR A WHILE JUST TO
PASS FROM ONE LOVELY HOUR TO ANOTHER AND NOTHING TO PAY! BUT WE

humans have always to pay something."

"Or some one pays for us."

"Well, isn't that worse ... taking it out of somebody else?"

"I'M NOT SO SURE, SOME FEOPLE BNIOY PAYING. It'S NOT A BAD FEELING, I

assure you: being able to pay. Haven't you found that out yet?"
"Not in Trethgarten Square." Mrs. Lessing had managed to let him

KNOW DURING THE DAY THAT HER GUEST HAD BEEN REARED WITHIN THE SACRED PALE OF THOSE FIRST FAMILIES IN WHOM THE OHOICE STOOK OF HUMANNESS IS three generations.
"In Trethgarten Square," Peter rewnded her, "We are told that you settle your account just by being; that you manage somehow to

REFINED BY BEING MAINTAINED AT PRECISELY THE SAME LEVEL FOR AT LEAST

BECOME SOMETHING SO SUPERFOR AND DELECTABLE THAT THE REST OF US ARE WILLING TO PAY FOR THE PRIVILEGE OF HAVING YOU ABOUT." HE WOULD HAVE LIKED TO ADD THAT RECENTLY, NO LATER IN FACT THAN THE EVENING BEFORE, HE HAD COME TO THINK THAT THIS WAS SO, BUT AS SHE HESITATED IN HER WALK BESIDE HIM, HE SAW THAT SHE WAS CONCERNED IN PUTTING THE CASE TO herself quite as much as to him.

herself quite as much as to him.

"It's NOT THAT EXACILY; MORE PERHAPS THAT OUR WHOLE THOUGHT ABOUT LIFE IS TO LIVE IT SO THAT THERE WON'T BE ANYTHING TO PAY. WE HAVE TO MANAGE TO ADD THINGS UP LIKE A COLUMN OF FIGURES WITH NOTHING TO CARRY. PERHAPS that's why we get so little out of it."

"DON'T YOU?"—HE WAS GENUNELY SURFRISED, "GET ANYTHING OUT OF IT, I

Mean."

"OH, BUT I'M A SELFISH BEAST, I SUPPOSE! I WANT MORE—MORE!" THEY
SWLING AS SHE SPOKE INTO A BROAD BEAM OF YELLOW LIGHT RAYING OUT FROM
THE LIBRARY WINDOW, AND HE SAW BY IT THAT WITH THE WORD SHE FLUNG OUT
HER ARWS WITH A LOVELY UPWARD MOTION THAT LIFTED HIS MOOD TO THE CREST

HER ARMS WITH A LOVELY UPWARD MOTION THAT LIFTED HIS MOOD TO THE CREST of audacity.

"IF YOU KEEP ON LOOKING LIKE THAT," PETER ASSURED HER, "YOU'LL GET IT." HE WAS STRUCK DUMB IMMEDIATELY AFTER WITH APPRELENSION. IT SOUNDED

WAS STRUCK DUMB IMMEDIATELY AFTEK WITH APPREHENSION. IT SOUNDED DARING, LIKE A THING SAID IN A BOOK; BUT SHE TOOK IT AS IT CAME LIGHTLY OFF THE TIP OF HIS IMPULSE, LAUGHING. "YES ... THE GREAT DIFFICULTY IS CHOOSING WHICH OF SO MANY THINGS ONE REALLY WANTS." THEY WALKED ON THEN IN SUBNOC, THE AIR DARKLING AFTER THE SUDDEN SHAFT OF ILLUMINATION, THE LIGHT FOLIOS OF HER SCARF BRUSHING HIS SUERVE. PETER WAS CONSIDERING HOW HE

FOLDS OF HER SCARF BRUSHING HIS SLEEVE. PETER WAS CONSIDERING HOW HE
MIGHT SAY, WITHOUT PRECIPITATION, HOW SUDDENLY SHE HAD LIMITED AND
DEFINED ALL THE THINGS THAT HE WANTED BY BYRRESSING THEM.

SO PERFECTLY

in herself, when she interrupted him.

them. It's a possibility denied to us." "EVBN HE," PETER INSISTED, "HAS TO RECKON WITH SUCH INCIDENTS AS MY dropping on him just now. I might have wanted him for a collection."

"THERE'S OUR MOTH AGAIN." SHE POINTED: "HE SETTLES IT BY TAKING ALL OF

"Oh, if he takes us into account it must be as men used to think of the GODS WALKING." SUDDENLY THE FAMILIAR BEDS AND HEDGES WIDENED FOR

PETER: THEY STRETCHED WARM AND TENDER TO THE BORDERS OF YOUTH AND THE LINNATCHED WONDER.... IT WAS SO THEY HAD TALKED WHEN THEY WALKED together in the Garden which was about the House....

FOR SOME TIME AFTER MISS GOODWARD LEFT HIM PETER REMAINED WALKING. UP AND DOWN THINKING OF MANY THINGS AND UNABLE TO THINK OF THEM CLEARLY BECAUSE OF A PLEASANT BLUR OF EXCITEMENT IN HIS BRAIN AS HE CAME FINALLY BACK TO THE HOUSE HE HEARD THE LESSINGS TALKING FROM

behind one of the open windows. "My word, that car was never out of the shop before." Julian was saving, "He's a goner!" "And that lovely, dusty, brown colour that goes so well with her hair! Who would have thought Peter would be so noticing."

"IT COULDN'T HAVE COST HIM A CENT UNDER SEVEN THOUSAND." JULIAN WAS CERTAIN. "AND CARRYING IT OFF WITH ME THE WAY HE DID-BOUGHT THE SIX CYLINDER AFTER ALL. HE HAD.... I'LL BET OLD PETER DON'T KNOW A CYLINDER FROM a stomach pump."

CLARGE WAS EVIDENTLY GOING ON WITH HER OWN LINE OF THOUGHT. "IT WILL BE "Well. IF SHE DON'T HER MOTHER WILL SEE IT FOR HER." LESSING'S VOICE DIED.

THE BEST THING THAT EVER HAPPENED TO FUNCE IF SHE CAN ONLY BE GOT TO see it."

INTO A SUBDUED CHUCKLE AS PETER PASSED UNDER IT ON THE DEW-DAMP

LAWN. BUT THERE WAS NO REVELATION IN IT FOR THE JUNIOR PARTINER. HE HAD ALREADY FOUND OUT WHAT WAS THE MATTER WITH HIM AND WHAT HE MEANT TO

do about it

Ш

WHATEVER THE PROCESS OF BECOMING BIGAGED TO EURICE GOODWARD LACKED OF DRAMATIC INTEREST, IT MADE UP TO PETER BY BEING SUCH A tremendous adventure for him to become engaged to anybody.

HE HAD GONE THROUGH LIFE MUCH AS HIS UNFRIENDED YOUTH HAD STRAYED THROUGH THE CITY STREETS, ACHING FOR THE WALLED-UP SRLENDOUR—ALL THE WORLD'S CHWALRIES, TENDERNESSES, RASSIONS—KNOWN TO HIM ONLY BY GLIMBERS AND REFLECTIONS ON THE PLAIN GLASS OF DUTY. NOW AT A WORD THE GLASS DISSOLVED AND HE WAS FREE TO WANDER THROUGH THE ROOMS CRAIMED WITH IMPERSHABLE POETS' WARES. HE WALKED THERE NOT ONLY AS ONE WHO HAS THE PRICE TO BUY, BUT HIMSELF MADE ONE OF THE SPLENDID THINGS OF EARTH BY THIS SAME WORD WHICH HER MERE BBING

SPLENDID THINGS OF EARTH BY THIS SAME WORD WHICH HER MERE BBING pronounced to him.

HE PAID HIMSELF FOR YEARS OF DENALS AND REPRESSIONS BY THE DISCOVERY OF BBING ABLE TO LOVE IN SUCH A KEY. FOR HE MEANT QUITE SIMPLY TO MARRY ELINGE GOODWARD IF SHE WOULD HAVE HIM, AND IT WAS NO VANITY WHICH GAVE HIM HOPE, BUT A TRIBUTE TO HER FINENESS AS BBING ABLE TO SEE HERSELF SO ABSOLUTELY THE ONE THING HIS LIFE WAITED FOR HE KNEW HIMSELF, MODESTLY, NO PRIZE FOR HER EXCEPT AS HE WAS ADDED TO BY INSTINABLE PASSION. WHATEVER SHE SAW IN HIM AS A MAN, FOR HER NOT TO RECOGNIZE THE IMMORTAL WORTH OF WHAT HE WAS ABLE TO BECOME UNDER HER HAND, WAS TO SUBTRACT SOMETHING FROM HER PERFECTIONS. IN HER ACCEPTANCE WOULD LIE THE QUEEN'S TOUCH, REDEBNING HIM FROM ALL COMMONNESS.

He made his first venture within a week after their first meeting, in a call on Miss Goodward and her mother in Trethgarten Square, where he found their red brick, vine-masked front distinguishable among half a hundred others by being kept open as late as the middle of June. To their being marconed thus in a desert of boarded-up doors

and shuttered windows, due, as Eunice had frankly and charmingly let HIM KNOW. TO THEIR BEING POOR AMONG THEIR KIND. HE DOUBTLESS OWED IT THAT NO OTHER CALLERS CAME TO DISTURB THE LANGUID AFTERNOON. SEEN AGAINST HER PROPER BACKGROUND OF THINGS PRECIOUS BUT WORN, AND IN THE STYLE OF A PRECEDING GENERATION. THE GIRL SHOWED EVEN LOVELIER THAN BEFORE, WITH THE RICH, PERFUMED QUALITY OF A FLOWER HELD IN A CHIPPED PORCELAIN VASE. A FLOWER MOREOVER SECURE IN ITS OWN PERFECTNESS. WAITING ONLY TO BE WORN, DISDAINING ALIKE TO OFFER OR RESIST. HER VERY QUIETNESS-SHE LEFT HIM. IN FACT, ALMOST WHOLLY TO HER MOTHER-HAD THE AIR OF CONDONING HIS STATE, OF UNDERSTANDING WHAT HE WAS THERE FOR AND OF FINDING IT SOMEHOW AN ACCENTLIATION OF THE INTEREST THEY LET HIM SEE THAT HE HAD FOR THEM. HE FOUND THEM, MOTHER AND DAUGHTER, MORE ALIKE. IN SPITE OF THEIR NATURAL AND EVIDENT DIFFERENCE OF YEARS. MORE OF A DEGREE THAN HE WAS ACCUSTOMED TO FIND MOTHER AND DAUGHTERS IN THE FEW HOUSES WHERE THE BUSINESS OF GROWING RICH HAD ADMITTED HIM. AS THOUGH THEY HAD BEEN CARVED OUT OF THE SAME MATERIAL, BY THE same distinguished artist, at different times in his career. IT CONTRIBUTED TO THE EFFECT OF HIS HAVING FOUND, NOT BY ACCIDENT, BUT BY SEEKING. A FRAME OF LIFE KEPT WAITING FOR HIM, KEPT WARM AND CONSCIOUS. PRESENTLY EUNICE POURED TEA FOR THEM, AND THE INTIMACY OF HER REVENBERING AS SHE DID. HOW HE TOOK IT. HAD ITS PART IN THE FREEDOM WHICH HE PRESENTLY FOUND FOR OFFERING HOSPITALITY ON HIS OWN

Brar Crest tentatively on the strength of the Lessings having once given a dinner there, and was relieved to find that he had made no mistake.

"A great many of your friends go there," Mrs. Goodward allowed; "The Van Stitarts, Eunice, you remember."

"The Gherreprongs are there now, mamma; I'm sure we shall bruoy

ACCOUNT, NOT AT HIS HOME, AS HE EXPLAINED TO THEM, HIS SISTER BEING AWAY, BUT SAY A DINNER AT BRIAR CREST TO WHICH THEY MIGHT MOTOR O PLEASANTLY SATURDAY AFTERNOON, RETURNING BY MOONLIGHT. HE OFFERED

"THE GHERBERDINGS ARE THERE NOW, MAMMA; I'M SURE WE SHALL BNUOY it." HAVING CROSSED THUS AT ONE FORTUNATE STROKE THE FRONTIERS OF SOCIAL OBSERVANCE, TO WHICH CLARICE HAD BUT EDGED HER WAY IN THE RIGHT OF BEING A THATCHER INWOOD. PETER VENTURED ON FRIDAY TO SUGGEST BY TELEPHONE THAT SINCE DINNER MUST BE LATE. THE LADIES SHOULD MEET HIM AT WHAT HE HAD TAKEN PAINS TO ASCERTAIN WAS THE CORRECT ONE OF HUGE UPTOWN HOTELS, FOR TEA BEFORE STARTING. IT WAS MRS. GOODWARD WHO ANSWERED HIM AND SHE WHOM HE MET IN THE WHITE. MARBLE TESSELLATED

ORDER TEA WITHOUT WAITING. THEY HAD TIME, HOWEVER, FOR THE TEA DRUNK AND FOR MRS. GOODWARD TO BECOME ANXIOUS IN A GENTLE. LADYLIKE WAY, BEFORE IT OCCURRED TO PETER TO SUGGEST THAT MISS GOODWARD MIGHT BE LURKING ANYWHERE IN THE POTTED PALM AND MARBLE PILLARED LABYRINTH, WAITING FOR them. SUFFERING EQUAL ANXIETIES, AND DREADFUL TO THINK OF IN THEIR PRESENT REPLETE CONDITION, LANGUISHING FOR TEA. HIS PROPOSAL TO GO AND LOOK FOR HER WAS ACCEPTED WITH JUST THE SHADE OF DEPRECATION WHICH ADMITTED HIM TO AN AMUSED TOLERANCE OF THE GIRL'S DELINQUENCIES. AS IF SOMEHOW EUNICE WOULDN'T HAVE DARED TO BE LATE

TEA-ROOM, EXPLAINING THAT EUNICE HAD HAD SOME SHOPPING TO DO-THEY WERE REALLY LEAVING ON SATURDAY—AND MR. WEATHERAL WAS TO

WITH HIM HAD SHE NOT HAD REASON MORE THAN ORDINARY FOR COUNTING ON his indulaence. "YOU'LL FIND." MRS. GOODWARD LET HIM KNOW, "THAT WE REQUIRE A DEAL OF looking after. Eunice and I."

"Ah. I only hope you'll find that I'm equal to it." Peter had answered her WITH SO LITTLE INDIRECTION THAT IT DREW FROM THE OLDER WOWAN A QUICK. MUTE BUSH OF SYMPATHY FOR A MOMENT THE HOMBURESS OF HIS LEAN. COUNTENANCE WAS RELIEVED WITH SO REDEBMING A TOUCH OF WHAT ALL WOMEN MOST WISH FOR IN ALL MEN THAT SHE MET IT WITH AN EQUAL SMPLICITY, "FOR MYSELF I AM. SURE OF IT." BUT LIFTED NEXT MOMENT TO A LIGHTER KEY, WITH A SMILE VERY LIKE HER DAUGHTER'S DRAGGED A LITTLE AWRY

BY THE USE OF YEARS, "AS FOR EUNICE, YOU'LL FIRST HAVE TO LAY HANDS ON her"

WITH THIS PERMISSION HE ROSE AND MADE THE CIRCUIT OF THE SEM-DIVIDED ROOMS, COMING OUT AT LAST INTO THE DIM ROTUNDA, FORESTED WITH CLUSTERED PORPHYRY COLUMNS. AND THERE AT LAST HE CAUGHT SIGHT OF HER. SHE HAD BUT JUST STEPPED INTO ITS SHADED COOLNESS OUT OF THE HOT. BRIGHT DAY, AND HUNG FOR A MOMENT, IN THE ACT OF FURLING HER PARASOL, IN WHICH HE WAS ABOUT TO HAIL HER. UNTIL HE DISCOVERED BY HIS STEPPING INTO RANGE FROM BEHIND ONE OF THE GREEN PILLARS. THAT SHE WAS ALSO IN THE ACT OF SAYING GOOD-BYE TO BURTON HENDERSON. THERE WAS A CERTAIN FINALITY IN THE WAY SHE HELD OUT HER HAND TO HIM WHICH CHECKED PETER. IN THE HOSPITABLE IMPULSE TO INCLUDE THE YOUNGER MAN IN THE AFTERNOON'S DIVERSION. HE STEPPED BACK THE MOMENT HE SAW THAT SHE WAS HAVING TROUBLE WITH HER ESCORT, DEFENDING HERSELF BY HER MANNER FROM SOMETHING ACCUSING IN HIS. NOT TO SEEM TO SPY UPON HER. Weatheral made his way back though the coatroom WITHOUT DISCLOSING HIMSELF. FROM THE DOOR OF IT HE TIMED HIS RETURN SO AS TO MEET HER FACE TO FACE AS SHE CAME UP WITH MRS. GOODWARD AND WAS REWARDED FOR IT BY THE GAYETY OF HER GREETING AND THE UNAFFECTEDNESS. of her attack of the fresh relay of toasted muffins and tea. "ABSOLUTELY FAMSHED." SHE TOLD THEM. "AND THE SHOPS ARE SO FASONATING! YOU'D FORGIVE ME, MR. WEATHERAL, IF YOU COULD SEE THE HEAPS AND HEAPS OF LOVELY THINGS SIMPLY BEGGING TO BE BOUGHT: IT SEEMED POSITIVELY UNKIND TO COME AWAY AND LEAVE ANY OF THEM." AS SHE SAID NOTHING WHATEVER ABOUT THE YOUNG MAN, IT SEEMED UNLIKELY THAT SHE COULD HAVE HIM MUCH ON HER MIND. SHE HAD A NEW WAY, VERY CHARMING TO PETER, OF SURRENDERING THE AFTERNOON INTO HIS HANDS; LET HIM ASK NOTHING OF HER SHE SEEVED TO SAY, BUT TO BYJOY HERSELF, SHE BUILT OUT OF THEIR BEING THERE BEFORE HER. A VERY DELIGHTFUL SUPPOSITION OF HER MOTHER AND MR. WEATHERAL. BETWEEN THEM HAVING MADE A LITTLE.

SPACE FOR HER TO BE GAY IN AND SIMPLE AND LOVELY AFTER HER OWN KIND. IF

SHE TOOK ANY ACCOUNT OF THEM IT WAS SUCH AS A DANCER MIGHT WHO. practising a few steps for the MERE JOY AND PRIDE OF IT, FINDS HERSELF unexpectedly surrounded by an interested and smiling audience. IF. HOWEVER, WITH THE MEMORY OF THAT AFTERNOON UPON HIM. PETER HAD GONE DOWN TO FAIRPORT IN THE LATTER PART OF JULY WITH THE EXPECTATION OF

RESUMING THE PART OF IMPRESARIO TO HER CHARM. HE SUFFERED A SHARP DISAPPOINTMENT. HE FOUND THE GOODWARDS, NOT IN THE EXPENSIVE

CARAVANSARY IN WHICH HE INSTALLED HIMSELF. BUT IN A SWALLER TRIBUTARY HOUSE SET BACK FROM THE MAIN HOTEL THOUGH NOT QUITE DISCONNECTED. WITH IT: FOR QUIET, MRS. GOODWARD TOLD HIM, THOUGH HE GUESSED QUITE AS much from economy. "It's wonderful. Really, what they do with so little." Clarice, with her fine DISCRIMINATIONS IN THE OBLIGATIONS OF FRIENDSHIP, HAD GENEROUSLY LET HM KNOW. "EUNICE HASN'T ANYTHING, POSITIVELY NOT COMPARISON WITH WHAT PEOPLE OF HER CLASS USUALLY HAVE. AND WITH HER

TASTE, YOU KNOW, THERE MUST BE THINGS SHE'S JUST ACHING FOR, THAT SOMEHOW YOU CAN'T GIVE HER!" YOU COULDN'T, INDEED, THOUGH PETER MADE EXCLISES ENOUGH FOR GIVING HER THE LISE OF HIS CAR. AND GIVING IT TO HER SHORN EVEN OF THE IMPLICATION OF HIS SOCIETY. THERE WERE FEW OCCASIONS WHEN HE COULD DO EVEN SO MUCH AS THAT. HE COULDN'T EVEN

give her his appreciations. FOR AT FAIRPORT THE GOODWARDS WERE QUITE IN THE HEART OF ALL THAT PETER HIMSELF FAILED TO UNDERSTAND THAT HE COULDN'T POSSIBLY BE. IT WAS NOT

THAT HE WASN'T TO THE EXTENT AT LEAST OF SUNDRY INVITATIONS GIVEN AND ACCEPTED. "IN" AS MUCH OF THE BEST SOCIETY AS FAIRPORT AFFORDED. MRS. GOODWARD SAW TO THAT, AND THERE WERE TWO OR THREE WHOM HE HAD MET AT THE LESSINGS' AS WELL AS MEN TO WHOM THE FIGURE OF HIS INCOME WAS THE CACHET OF ELIGIBILITY. IT WASN'T INDEED THAT HE WASN'T LIKED, AND THAT

OUTE AT HIS PROPER WORTH, BUT THAT HE COLLDN'T SOMEHOW MANAGE IT SO. THAT THE BEST SCORETY CARED IN THE LEAST WHETHER HE LIKED IT. HE COULD

SEE, IN A WAY, WHERE CLARICE HAD BEEN AT WORK FOR HIM: BUT THE POISON.

THAT WAS DROPPED IN HIS CLIP WAS THE CERTAINTY THAT THE WAY FOR HIM HAD TO BE "WORKED." THE DISCOVERY THAT HE COULDN'T JUST FIND HIS WAY TO FUNCE GOODWARD'S SIDE BY THE SAME QUALITIES THAT HAD BLACED HIM

BESIDE THE MALES OF HER CIRCLE IN POINT OF PROPERTY AND POWER. THAT HE

COULDN'T WITHOUT ADMISSION TO THAT CIRCLE, PROPERLY COURT HER, HEWMED him in bewilderinaly.

HER METHOD OF ELUDING HIM. IF THERE WERE METHOD IN IT. LEFT HIM FEELING.

NOT SO MUCH AVOIDED AS PREVENTED BY THE MOVES OF A GAME HE HADN'T

MEANT TO PLAY. SO GREATLY IT IRKED HIS NATURAL SIMPLICITY TO BE BANDED

him by Mrs. Goodward.

HE PERCEVED ON CLOSER ACQUAINTANCE, THAT THIS LADY'S FINE SERENTY OF
MANNER WAS DUE LARGELY TO HER NEVER ADMITTING TO HER MIND THE
URSETTING POSSIBILITY. SHE THOUGHT HER WORLD INTO ACCEPTABLE SHAPE.
AND HELD IT THERE BY THE SIMPLE PROCESS OF IGNORING THE FOODNIRGITIES

ABOUT BY THE SOCIAL OBSERVANCES OF THE FLACE, THAT IT MIGHT HAVE LED HIM TO IRRECOVERABLE MISTAKES HAD IT NOT BEEN FOR THE HAND HELD OUT TO

of its axis.

PETER WOULD HAVE ADMRED, IF HIS UNSOPHISTICATION HAD ALLOWED HIM,
THE FACILITY WITH WHICH SHE MADE IT REVOLVE NOW ABOUT THEIR MUTUAL
PRESUIT OF EUNICE THROUGH THE RATTLE AND CHEARNESS OF WHAT WAS
KNOWN AS "THE BURTON HENDERSON SET." AS IT WAS AGAINST JUST SUCH
SOCIAL INCONSPOLENCE THAT PETER FEIT HIMSELF STRONG TO DEFEND HER. HE

FELL BASILY INTO THE KEY OF CREDITING THE GIRL'S SUDDEN, BEWILDERING FLIGHT to it as a mere midsummer madness.

"It's THE WAY WITH GIRLS, I FANCY," MIRS. GOODWARD HAD SAID TO HIM, STROLLING UP AND DOWN THE HOTEL VERANDA WHERE THROUGH THE WIDE FRENCH WINDOWS THEY HAD GLIMPSES OF EUNCE WHIRLING AWAY ON THE ICE POLISHED FLOOR OF THE BALLROOM WITHIN, "THEY GLING THE MORE TO gravety as they see the graver things of life bearing down upon them."

"Ah, there's much a mother sees, Mr. Weatheral----"
"You would, of course," he accepted.

"You think she sees that?"

"It's A WOMAN'S PART, SEENC; THERE'S AN INSTINCT IN US NOT TO SEE TOO soon." She gave him the benefit of her sweet weighted smile.

PETER LIVED GREATLY ON THESE THINGS. HE WAS SO SURE OF HINSELF, OF THE REALITY AND STRENGTH OF HIS RASSION, HE HAD A FEELING OF ITS BEING OUTE BROUGH FOR THEM TO GO ON, AN INDHAUSTBLE, FAIRY CAPITAL OUT OF WHICH AI MOST ANYTHING THAT FLINGS GOODWARD DESIRED MOSH BY THE PRAWN. IT

was fortunate that he found his passion so self-sufficing, for there was

little enough that Eunice AFFORDED IT BY WAY OF SUSTEMANCE. FOR A WEEK HE NO MORE THAN KEPT IN SIGHT OF HER IN THE INEVITABLE SUMMER ROUND; HE DID NOT DANCE AND THE GAME OF CARDS HE COULD PLAY WAS GALICED TO WHAT ELLEN COULD MANAGE IN AN OCCASIONAL QUIET EVENING AT THE Lessinas'. "I SUPPOSE" EUNICE HAD SAID TO HIM ON AN OCCASION WHEN HE HAD KNOWN BYOUGH TO DECLINE AN INVITATION FOR AN AFTERNOON'S PLAY TO WHICH

BURTON HENDERSON WAS CARRYING HER AWAY. "THAT THE STAKES WE PLAY FOR

aren't any temptation to vou." "I THINK THAT THEY'RE OUT OF PROPORTION TO THE TROUBLE YOU HAVE TO BE AT TO win them " "Oh, if you don't care for the game——" "I DON'T." AND THEN CASTING ABOUT FOR A PHRASE THAT EXPLAINED HIM MORE

HAPPILY. "PUT IT THAT I LIKE TO OUT OUT MY JOB AND GO TO IT." SHE GAVE HIM A QUICK, CONDONING FLASH OF LAUGHTER: THE FHRASE WAS LESSING'S AND OUT OF HER RECOGNITION OF IT HE DREW, LOVERLIKE, THAT ASSURANCE OF common understanding so dear to lovers. "Put it," he ventured further, "THAT I DON'T LIKE TO SEE MYSELF BALKED OF THE PRIZE BY THE WAY THE CARDS are dealt."

"AH, BUT THAT'S WHAT MAKES IT A GAME, I'D NO IDEA YOU WERE SUCH Arevolutionist "

"EVOLUTIONIST." HE CORRECTED. HAPPY IN HAVING TOUGHED THE SUBTLER NOTE BEHIND THEIR PERSIFLAGE. "I'VE ALL SCIENCE ON MY SIDE FOR THE MOST DIRECT METHOD." AFTER ALL, WHY SHOULD HE LET EVEN THE BEST SOCIETY DEAL THE CARDS FOR HIM? SHOULD NOT A MAN SWEEP THE BOARDS OF WHATEVER KEPT. him from his natural mate? THAT WAS ON TUESDAY, AND THE THURSDAY FOLLOWING HE HAD ASKED THE

GOODWARDS TO MOTOR OVER TO LIGHTHOUSE REEF WITH HIM. HE DID NOT

KNOW QUITE WHAT HE MEANT TO BRING ABOUT ON THIS OCCASION: HE HAD SO

MUCH THE FEELING OF ITS BEING AN OCCASION. THE INVITATION HAD BEEN SO

HIMSELF TO THE DISCOVERY ON ARRIVING AT THEIR HOTEL WITH THE CAR. THAT Eunice had gone to play tennis instead. "THE TIME IS SO SHORT." MRS. GOODWARD APOLOGIZED: "SHE FELT SHE MUST. MAKE THE MOST OF IT." SHE HAD TO LEAVE IT THERE, NOT BEING ABLE TO MAKE A GAME OF TENNIS IN THE HOT SLIN SEEM MORE OF A DIVERSION THAN THE STEADY PACING OF THE LUXURIOUS CAR ALONG THE ROAD WHICH LACED THE FOREST TO THE SINGING REACHES. SHE HAD TO LET HER SIDEWISE SMILE DO WHAT IT COULD TOWARD MAKING THE GIRL'S BALD EVASION OF HER ENGAGEMENT SEEM THE MERE FLUTTER AND HESITANCY OF BESIEGED FEMINITY. FOR THE MOMENT SHE WAS AS MUCH "OUTSIDE" SO FAR AS HER DAUGHTER WAS CONCERNED AS PETER WAS OF THE SELECT BRIGHT CIRCLE IN which she moved THE WAY OPENED BEFORE THEM, BEAUTIFUL IN LATE BLOOM AND HEAVY FERN. above which the sea wind kept a perpetual movement of aliveness. "EUNICE WILL MISS IT." MRS. GOODWARD RALLIED: "SUCH A PERFECT. AFTERNOON!" SHE GAVE HIM THE OBLIQUE SMILE AGAIN, WEIGHTED THIS TIME WITH THE KNOW FOOE OF ALL THAT PETER HADN'T BEEN ABLE OR HADN'T TRIED TO

POINTEDLY GIVEN AND ACCEPTED. IT WAS WITH DIFFICULTY HE ADJUSTED

WITH THE KNOWLEDGE OF ALL THAT PETER HADN'T BEEN ABLE OR HADN'T TRIED TO KEEP FROM HER. "IT ISN'T EASY, IS IT," SHE WENT ON ADDRESSING HER SHEECH TO WHATEVER, AT THE MENTION OF HER DAUGHTER'S NAME, HUNG IN THE AR BETWEEN THEM, "TO STAND BY AND SEE OTHER PEOPLE'S GREAT moments hover over them. One would like so to lend a hand. And one IS SURE OF NOTHING SO MUCH AS THAT IF THEY ARE REALLY TO be BIG, ONE MUSHIN'T."

mustn't."
"IF YOU FEEL THAT," PETER SNATCHED AT ENCOURAGEMENT, "THAT IT IS REALLY
THE BIG THING FOR HER—WHAT I'M SURE YOU CAN'T HELP KNOWING WHAT I
mean—what I hope."

mean—what I hope."

"What / FEEL—? AFTER ALL, IT'Sher FEELING, MY DEAR MR. WEATHERAL, THAT WE HAVE TO TAKE INTO ACCOUNT. IT WOULDN'T BE FAIR FOR ME TO ATTEMPT

to answer to you for that!"
"AND OF COURSE IF I CAN'T make HER FEEL...." HE DID NOT TRUST HIMSELF TO A

conclusion. THEY FOUND, HOWEVER, WHEN THE ROAD ISSUED ON THE COAST OPPOSITE THE GREAT BURSTING BULKS OF SPRAY, THAT EUNICE'S DESERTION AND THE EXTENUATION OF IT TO WHICH THEY HAD LENT THEMSELVES. HAD PUT THEM OUT OF THE MOOD FOR THE HIGH WIND AND WARRING SURF OF THE REEF. ACCORDINGLY THEY TURNED ASIDE AT PETER'S SUGGESTION TO HAVE TEA AT A LITTLE COUNTRY INN FARTHER BACK IN THE HILLS. WHERE THE POUND OF THE SEA WAS REDUCED TO A SOFT, ORGAN-BOOMING BASS TO WHICH THE SHRILL NOTE OF THE NEEDLES COUNTERED IN PERFECT TUNE. THE TEA GARDEN. THE FAVOURTE PORT OF CALL FOR AFTERNOON DRIVES FROM THE RESORTS HEREABOUTS, LAY BACK OF THE HOSTELRY IN A NARROW. FERNY GLEN FROM WHICH SPRINGS ISSUED. AS PETER LED THE WAY UP ITS ROCKY STAIR. THEY COULD HEAR THE LIGHT LAUGHTER. OF A PARTY JUST RISING FROM ONE OF THE ROUND RUSTIC TABLES. THE GROUP DESCENDING POURED PAST THEM A SUMMER-COLOURED RUNNEL DOWN THE LITTLE GLEN, AND LEFT THEM FACE TO FACE WITH EUNICE, WHO HAD LINGERED. her dress caught on a point of the rustic chair. "Mamma—you!" She looked trapped, accused, though sheer ASTONISHMENT HELD THE OTHERS DUMB. "WE FINISHED THE GAME----" SHE BEGAN AND STOPPED SHORT: AFTER ALL. HER MANNER SEEMED TO SAY, WHY SHOULDN'T SHE HAVE TEA THERE WITH HER ERIENDS? SHE MADE AS IF TO SWEEP PAST AFTER THEM BUT MRS. GOODWARD NEVER MOVED FROM THE

daughter, and as plainly at bay.

"Now that we are here——" she began in her turn.

"Now that YOU HAVE FOLLOWED ME HERE," THE GRL RANG OUT, "WHAT IS IT
THAT YOU HAVE TO SAY TO ME?" SHE WAS WHITE AND A BRIGHT FLAME SPOT

NARROW PATH. SHE WAS MORE EMBARRASSED. PETER SAW. THAN HER

Showed on either cheek.
"I—OH," THE ELDER WOMAN BY AN EFFORT DREW THE REMNANT OF THE GRAND
MANNER ABOUT HER, "IT IS MR. WEATHERAL, I THINK, WHO MIGHT HAVE

SOMETHING TO SAY." SHE CAUGHT THE OCCASION AS IT WERE ON THE WING.

PETER HEARD THE QUICK BREATH BEHIND HIM WITH WHICH SHE GRASPED IT.

"Now that you are here, however, I'll tell your party that you will be

STOPHER FUNCE HAD NOT MADE A MOVE TO DO SO. SHE STOOD OLASPING. THE BACK OF THE CHAIR FROM WHICH SHE HAD FREED HER DRESS, AND LOOKED across it mutinously at Peter. "And what," she quivered, "has Mr. Weatheral to say to me?" "There is nothing," he told her, "that I would say to you, Miss

DRIVING HOME WITH US." SHE GATHERED UP HER DRAPERIES AND WAS GONE DOWN THE PATH SHE HAD COME BEFORE BITHER OF THE OTHERS THOUGHT TO

GOODWARD, UNLESS YOU WISHED TO HEAR IT." HIS MAGNANIMITY SHAMED her a little. "I BROKE MY ENGAGEMENT TO YOU," SHE ADMITTED, "BROKE IT TO COME

here with—the others. I haven't any excuse to offer you." "And when." Peter dewanded of her. "have I asked any other excuse. OF YOU FOR ANYTHING THAT YOU CHOSE TO DO EXCEPT THAT YOU CHOSE IT

THERE WAS SOMETHING I WISHED TO SAY TO YOU. THAT I HOPED FOR A MORE AUSPICIOUS COCASION...." HE HURRIED ON WITH IT SUDDENLY AS A THING TO BE GOT OVER WITH AT ALL HAZARDS. "IT WAS TO SAY THAT I HOPED YOU MIGHT NOT FIND IT UTTERLY BEYOND YOU TO THINK OF MARRYING ME." HE SAW HER

SWAY A LITTLE. HOLDING STILL TO HER CHAIR, AND MOVED TOWARD HER A STEP. DIZZY HIMSELF WITH THE SUDDEN ONSET OF EMOTION. "BUT NOW THAT IT IS said, if it distresses you we will say no more about it." She waved him back for a moment without altering her strained, trapped attitude.

"HAVE YOU SAID THIS TO MAMMA? AND HAS SHE—HAS SHE SAID ANYTHING to you? About me. I mean: how I might take it, or anything?" "She said that she couldn't answer for you; that it was your feeling that MUST BE TAKEN INTO ACCOUNT. SHE PUT ME, SO TO SPEAK, ON MY OWN FEET

IN SO FAR AS that WAS CONCERNED." HE WAITED FOR HER ANSWER TO THAT. and none coming, though he saw that she grew a little easier, he went

ON PRESENTLY. "THERE IS. HOWEVER, MUCH THAT I FEEL OUGHT TO BE SAID.

ABOUT MY FEELING FOR YOU, WHAT IT MEANS TO ME, WHAT I HOPED----" SHE STOPPED HIM WITH A GESTURE: HE COULD SEE HER LOVELY MANNER COMING

back to her as guiet comes to the surface of a smitten pool.

"Quite, quite," he assured her. "It may be," he managed to smile upon
HER HERE FOR THE EASING OF HER SWEET DISCOMPOSURE, "IT MAY VERY
easily be that I was thinking too much of my pleasure in saying it."

"THAT—ONE MAY TAKE FOR GRANTED, MAY ONE NOT? SINCE YOU have a sked me, that the feeling that goes to it is all I have a right to ask?"

"It would, then, be a pleasure?" She had the air of snatching at that as something concrete, graspable.

"It would, and it wouldn't. I mean if you were bothered by it. You could take everything for granted, everything."

"EVBN." SHE INSISTED, "TO THE POINT OF TAKING IT FOR GRANTED THAT YOU

WOULD TAKE THINGS FOR GRANTED FROM ME. THAT YOU WOULDN'T EXPECT anything—any expression, anything more than just accepting you?"

"Ah!" he cried, the wonder, the amazement of success breaking upon
HM. "IF YOU ACCEPTED ME WHAT MORE could I EXPECT." HE HAD CLASPED
THE HAND WHICH SHE HELD OUT TO OPECK HIM AND HELD IT ACAINST HIS HEART

"I HAVEN'T, YOU KNOW," SHE REMINDED HIM, "BUT IF I WAS SURE—VERY SURE
THAT YOU WOULDN'T ASK ANY MORE OF ME THAN THINKING, I ... MIGHT THINK
ABOUT IT." SHE WAS TREMBLING NOW, THOUGH HER HAND WAS SO COLD, AND
SUDDENLY BEAT GRATHERED AND GROUP OF SPIASHING HER FIRE WRIST.

firmly that she shouldn't see how he trembled.

POSSIBLE TO BE, "YOU CAN BE PERFECTLY SURE THAT THERE WILL NEVER BE ANYTHING BETWEEN YOU AND ME THAT SHALL NOT BE EXACTLY AS YOU WISH."

HE SUTTED HIS ACTION TO THE WORD, KISSING THE WET SPLASH AND LETTING her go.

"WHY, THEN," SHE RECOVERED HERSELF WITH THE SMILE THAT WAS NOW

"Oh, MY DEAR, MY DEAR!" HE CRIED, MOVED MORE THAN HE HAD THOUGHT IT

STRANGELY LIKE HER MOTHER'S, SWEETER FOR BEING SMILED A LITTLE AWRY, "THE BEST THING YOU CAN DO IS TO FIND POOR MAMMA AND LET US GIVE HER A CUP of tea."



IV

"Peter, have you any idea what I am thinking about?"

"NOT IN THE LEAST, ELLEN," WHICH WAS NOT STRICTLY THE TRUTH. HE SUPPOSED SHE MUST BE THINKING NATURALLY OF THE NEWS HE HAD TOLD HER NOT AN HOUR SINCE, OF HIS BYCACEMENT TO ELINDE GOODWARD. IT LAY SO CLOSE TO THE SUPFACE OF HIS OWN MIND AT ALL TIMES THAT THE SUGHTEST STIR OF CONVERSATION, LIKE THE WIND ABOVE A SECRET ROSE, SEEMED ALWAYS ABOUT TO DISCLOSE IT. THEY WIRE SITTING ON THE PORCH AT BLOOMBURY AND the pointed swallows pitched and darted about the eaves.

"IT WAS THE SMELL OF THE DUST THAT REMINDED ME," SAID ELLEN, "AND THE WILD ROSE AT THE TURN OF THE ROAD; YOU CAN SMELL IT AS FLAIN AS FLAIN WHEN THE AIR LIFTS A LITTLE. DO YOU REMEMBER A PRONC THAT WE WERE INVITED TO AND COULDN'T GO? IT WAS ON ACCOUNT OF BEING POOR ... AND I WAS JUST FINDING IT OUT. I FOUND OUT A GOOD MANY THINGS THAT SUMMER; ABOUT MY ALWAYS GOING TO BE LAME AND WHAT IT WOULD MEAN TO US. IT WAS DREADFUL TO ME THAT I COULDN'T BE LAME JUST BY MYSELF, BUT I HAD TO MIX UP YOU AND MOTHER!

"WE WERE GLAD, ELLEN, TO BE MIXED UP IN IT IF IT MADE THINGS EASIER FOR you."

"I KNOW ... TIMES I FELT THAT WAY ABOUT IT TOO, BUT THAT WAS WHEN I WAS OLDER ... AS IF IT SORT OF HELD US ALL TOGETHER, LIKE SOMEBODY WHO HAD BELONGED TO US ALL AND HAD DIED. ONLY IT WAS METHAT DIED, THE METHAT WOULD have been if I hadn't been lame.... Well, I hadn't thought it out so FAR THAT FIRST SUMMER, I JUST HATED IT BECAUSE IT KEPT US FROM DOING THINGS LIKE OTHER FEORLE. YOU WERE FOND OF ADA BROWN, I REMEMBER, AND IT WAS BECAUSE I WAS LAME AND WE WERE SO POOR AND ALL, THAT YOU COULDN'T GO WITH HER AND SHE GOT ENGAGED TO JIM HARVEY. I HOPE YOU DON'T THINK I HAVE A BAD HEART, PETER, BUT I WAS ALWAYS GLAD THAT ADA DIDN'T THINK UT VERY WELL. EVERY TIME I SAW HER GETTING HOMEILER AND

THAT AT ANY RATE. I COULDN'T HAVE BORNE IT IF SHE HAD TURNED OUT THE KIND of a person you ought to have married." "YOU SHOULDN'T HAVE WORRIED. ELLEN: VERY FEW MEN MARRY THE FIRST woman they are interested in." "THERE WAS A GIRL YOULDSED TO WRITE HOME ABOUT—AT THAT BOARDING-

KIND OF BEDRAGGLED LIKE. I SAID TO MYSELF, WELL, I'VE SAVED PETER FROM

HOUSE, I USED TO GET YOU TO WRITE. I DARESAY YOU THOUGHT I WAS JUST CURROUS BUT I WAS TRYING TO FIND OUT SOMETHING THAT WOULD MAKE ME PERFECTLY SURE SHE WASN'T GOOD ENOUGH FOR YOU. SHE WAS A TYPEWRITER, wasn't she?"

"Something of that sort." "Well!" Ellen took him up triumphantly, "You wouldn't have wanted to be married to a typewriter now!"

"I NEVER REALLY THOUGHT OF MARRYING ONE, ELLEN. I'M SURE EVERYTHING HAS turned out for the best "

"THAT'S WHAT I'M TRYING TO TELL YOU. YOU SEE I WAS DETERMINED IT SHOULD. TURN OUT THAT WAY. I SAID. WHAT WAS THE USE OF BBING LAME AND BBING A

BURDEN TO YOU UNLESS THERE WAS SOMETHING MEANT BY IT I'D HAVE FRETTED DREADFULLY IF I HADN'T FELT THAT THERE WAS SOMETHING TO COME OUT.

OF IT. AND IT HAS COME.... PETER. YOU'D RATHER I'D SAVED YOU FOR THIS THAN anything that might have happened?" "Much rather, Ellen."

HAD BEEN A PIECE OF FURNITURE. ELLEN COULDN'T HAVE APPRAISED HER

IT HAD SURPRISED HIM IN THE TELLING. TO SEE HOW ACCURATELY HIS SISTER HAD GAUGED THE WORLDLY ADVANTAGE OF HIS MARRIAGE. IF EUNICE GOODWARD

BETTER AT HER OBVIOUS WORTH: BEAUTY AND CHARACTER AND FAMILY AND THE

MYSTERIOUS CACHET OF SOCIETY, CLARICE HAD BEEN AT WORK THERE, TOO, HE

SUSPECTED. MISS GOODWARD FITTED IN ELLEN'S MIND'S EYE INTO HER

brother's life and fortune as a picture into its frame.

MATERIAL FROM WHICH HE HAD DRAWN ITS EARLIEST FURNISHINGS LAY ALL ABOUT THEM, THE RECEDING BLUE OF THE SUMMER SKY, THE AGED, ARCHING AFFLE BOUGHS. THE SCENT OF THE WILDING ROSE CAME FAINTLY IN FROM THE COUNTRY road—suddenly his sister surprised him with a flash of rare insight.

"I GUESS THERE CAN'T ANYTHING KEEP US FROM THE BEST EXCEPT OURSELVES," SHE SAID. "BEING WILLING TO PUT UP WITH THE SECOND BEST GIVES US MORE TROUBLE THAN THE LORD EVER MEANT FOR US. THINK OF THE WAY I'VE ALWAYS WANTED CHILDREN—BUT IF THEY'D BEEN MY REAL OWN, THEY'D HAVE BEEN SICKLY, LIKELY, OR EVEN LAME LIKE ME, OR JUST ORDINARY LIKE THE ONLY KIND OF MAIN WHO WOULD HAVE MARRIED ME. AS IT IS, I'VE HAD CLARICE'S AND NOW——" She broke off with a quick, old-maidish colour.

ELLEN HAD GONE SO FAR AS TO NAME ALL OF PETER'S CHILDREN IN THE DAYS.

"I'M VERY GLAD YOU FEEL THAT WAY ABOUT IT, Ellen," HE SAID AGAIN; HE WAS ON THE POINT OF TELLING HER ABOUT THE HOUSE OF SHINING WALLS. THE

WHEN NOTHING SEEMED SO UNLIKELY; NOW IN THE FACE OF HIS RECENT engagement she would have thought it indelicate.

"She would have liked you marrying so well, Peter," SHE FINSHED WITH A BACKWARD MOTION OF HER HEAD TOWARD THE ROOM WHERE THE PARLOUR SET, BANSHED LONG AGO FROM THE TOWN HOUSE, SYMBOLIZED FOR ELLEN THE brooding maternal presence.

"YES, SHE WOULD HAVE LIKED IT." THERE CAME BACK TO HIM WITH DEEP SATISFACTION HIS MOTHER'S APPRAISEMENT OF YOUNG MIRS. DIASSONVILLE, WHO MUST, AS HE RECALLED HER, HAVE BEEN SHAPED BY MUCH THE SAME frame of life as Eunice Goodward—the Lovely Lady. The long unused PHRASE HAD RISEN UNCONSCIOUSLY TO HIS LIPS ON THE DAY THAT HE HAD BROUGHT FUNCE HER BING. HE HAD SPENT A WHOLE WEEK IN THE CITY.

ALMOST BYOROLING HER FINGER WITH THE MYSTIC NUMBER SEVEN. HE HAD
DISCOVERED ON THE DAY THAT SHE HAD ACCEPTED HIM, THAT IT HAD
TO BE
EMERALDS TO MATCH THE GREEN LIGHTS THAT HER EYES TOOK ON IN THE GLEN
FROM THE DEEP FERN, THE MOSSY BANK AND THE GREEN BOUGHS OVERHEAD.

CHOOSING IT; THREE LITTLE FLAWLESS, OBLONG EMERALDS SET WITH DIAMONDS,

FROM THE DEEP FERN, THE MOSSY BANK AND THE GREEN BOUGHS OVERHEAD. ON THE TERPACE AT LESSINGS' UNDER A WIDE JUNE SKY HE HAD SUPPOSED THEM TO BE BLUE BUT THERE WAS NO BLUE STONE OF THAT SKY COLOUR OF sufficient preciousness for Eunice Goodward. SHE HAD BEEN VERY SWEET ABOUT THE RING, TOUCHED WITH GRATEFUL

SURPRISE FOR ITS BEAUTY AND ITS TASTE. SOMETHING HE COULD SEE OF RELIEF. OF ASSURANCE, FLASHED AND FELL BETWEEN THE TWO WOMEN AS SHE

SHOWED IT TO HER MOTHER. THEY HAD TAKEN HIM SO BEAUTIFULLY ON TRUST. THEY COULDN'T HAVE KNOWN, HE REFLECTED, WHETHER HE WOULD RISE AT ALL TO THE DELICATE, BALANCED OBSERVATION OF LIFE AMONG THEM: IT WAS

EVIDENCE, THE EMERALD CIRCLET, OF HOW SATISFYINGLY HE HAD RISEN. THE LOOK THAT PASSED BETWEEN MOTHER AND DAUGHTER WAS LIKE A SPARK THAT LIGHTED AS IT FELL. AN UNSUSPECTED NEED OF HIM AS MAN MERELY. THE

MALE BLEMENT. SECURITY, DEPENDABILITY, CARE. HIS FIRST RESPONSE TO IT Was that of a swimmer who has struck earth under him. He knew in that flash where he was, by what familiar shores; and the whole effect, IN SPITE OF HIM WAS OF THE SUDDEN SHRINKAGE OF THAT LUSTROUS SEA IN WHICH HIS SOUL AND SENSE HAD FLOATED. IT STEADLED HIM, BUT IT ALSO FOR THE MOMENT NARROWED A LITTLE THE HORIZON OF ADVENTURE IT WAS THE OCCASION THAT EUNICE TOOK TO DEFINE FOR HIM HIS STATUS AS AN ENGAGED man

HE KEPT AS FAR AS HE WAS ARI F HIS COMPACT OF EXPECTING NOTHING OF HER. EXCEPT OF COURSE THAT HE COULDN'T AVOID EXPECTING THAT THEIR

ARRANGEMENT WOULD LEAD IN THE NATURAL COURSE TO MARRIAGE SHE HAD MET HIM MORE THAN HALFWAY IN THAT, AGREEING TO AN EARLIER DATE THAN HE HAD THOUGHT COMPATIBLE WITH THE RITUAL OF BNGAGEMENTS IN THE BEST SOCIETY. SHE HAD MANAGED, HOWEVER, THAT PETER SHOULD PRESENT HER WITH HER SUMMER FREEDOM: THE BNGAGEMENT WAS NOT EVEN TO BE ANNOUNCED UNTIL THEIR RETURN TO TOWN, AND IN THE MEANTIME PETER WAS

TO FIND A HOUSE. HE HAD OFFERED HER TRAVEL FOR THAT FIRST YEAR. EUROPE. WHICH HE HAD SCARCELY GLIMPSED, GLITTERED AND ALLURED. BUT TRAVEL,

Eunice let him know, went much better when you had a place to come BACK TO, HE SAW AT ONCE HOW RIGHT WAS EVERYTHING SHE DID. WILL, THEN,

a house on Fillmore Avenue? "OH-SHALL WE BE SO RICH AS THAT, PETER?" HE DIVINED SOME "I've a couple of options at Maplemont——"

"Oh, Maplemont——" She liked that also, he perceived.

"AND A PLACE IN FLORDA. LESSING AND I BOUGHT IT THE WINTER THE CHILDREN

embarrassment in her as to the scale in which they were to live. "We'll

want something in the country, too," she reminded him.

HAD THE DIFHTHERIA. THEY'VE A VERY FRETTY BUNGALOW; WE COULD PUT UP SOMETHING LIKE IT FOR CURSELVES—IF YOU WOULDN'T MIND MY SISTER occasionally. Ellen isn't happy at hotels."

"MIND! WITH ALL YOU'RE GIVING ME! YOU WON'T THINK IT'S JUST THE MONEY.

"MIND! WITH ALL YOU'RE GIVING ME! YOU WON'T THINK IT'S JUST THE MONEY,
PETER," SHE HAD A VERY CHARWING HESTIANCY ABOUT IT. "IT'S WHAT MONEY
STANDS FOR, BEAUTY, AND SUITABLITY—AND—EVERYTHING." HE WAS VERY
tender with her.

"It'S NOT THAT I HAVE SUCH A PILE OF IT EITHER," HE ASSURED HER, "THOUGH I
TURN OVER A GREAT DEAL IN THE COURSE OF A YEAR. IT'S EASIER MAKING

money than people think."

"EASIER FOR EVERYBODY?" THERE WAS A CERTAIN EAGERNESS IN THE LOOK and voice.

"EASIER FOR THOSE WHO KNOW HOW. I'M ONLY FORTY. AND I'VE LEARNED."

"AND SOME HAVEN'T THE GIFT TO LEARN, PERSHAPS," FOR SOME REASON SHE

"Have you told Clarice yet?"

recalled him

"I MEAN TO, SUNDAY, IF YOU DON'T MIND MY NOT COMING DOWN TO YOU.

MISS GOODWARD IS SPENDING THE WEEK BIND AT MAPLEMONT, AND BY

staving at Julian's——"

SIGHED.... HE WAS TURNING ALL THIS OVER IN HIS MIND WHEN SUDDENLY ELLEN

SAYS." SHE NEVER DID KNOW EXACTLY, FOR WHEN CLARICE GAVE PETER HER CONGRATULATIONS IN THE TERRACE GARDEN AFTER DINNER. SHE MISSED. extraordinarily for her, the felicitous note. "I'M SO HAPPY FOR EUNICE YOU CAN'T MAGINE." SHE INSISTED. "I'VE ALWAYS SAID WE'VE NONE OF US KNOWN WHAT EUNICE CAN DO UNTIL SHE'S HAD HER OPPORTUNITY. AND NOW WITH ALL THE BACKGROUND YOU CAN GIVE her-You'll see!" HE DIDN'T QUITE KNOW WHAT HE WAS TO SEE EXCEPT THAT IF ELINICE WERE TO

"Of*course*." Ellen sympathized. "I shall want to know what Clarice

BE IN THE PICTURE IT WAS BOUND TO BE SATISFYING. BUT MRS. LESSING WAS NOT DONE WITH HIM. "FOR ALL HER BEING SO BEAUTIFUL AND SO WELL PLACED." SHE WENT ON. "EUNICE HAS NEVER HAD ANY LIFE AT ALL. NOT WHAT YOU MIGHT CALL A LIFE AND SHE MIGHT SO FASILY HAVE MISSED THIS. IT IS HARD FOR GIRLS TO REALIZE SOMETIMES THAT THE SUCCESS OF MARRIAGE DEPENDS ON REAL QUALITIES IN THE MAN. IN MASTERY OVER THINGS AND NOT JUST OVER HER SUSCEPTIBILITIES. IT IS QUITE THE MOST SENSIBLE THING I'VE KNOWN EUNICE to do "

"Only." Peter rewinded her for his part. "I'm not just exactly doing it BECAUSE IT IS SENSIBLE." HER "OF COURSE NOT" WAS CONVINCED ENOUGH TO HAVE STILLED THE VAGUE RUFFLING OF HIS MIND. WITHOUT DOING IT. HE DIDN'T OBJECT TO HAVING HIS QUALIFICATIONS AS EUNICE GOODWARD'S HUSBAND TAKEN SOLIDLY, BUT WHY DWELL UPON THEM WHEN IT WAS JUST THE PARTICULAR DISTINCTION OF HIS ENGAGEMENT THAT IT HAD THE INTENSITY. THE SPIRITUAL

EXTENSION WHICH WAS SUPPOSED TO PUT IT OUT OF REACH OF MATERIAL considerations. Even Ellen had done better by him than this. HE WAS FORCED. HOWEVER, TO COME BACK TO THE SUBSTANCE OF MRS.

LESSING'S COMMENT A FEW DAYS LATER WHEN HE WAS BEING DINED AT THE

CLUB BY A TWICE-REMOVED COUSIN OF THE GOODWARD'S. THE UPRIGHT. ELDERLY SYMBOL OF THE MALE SANCTION WHICH WAS THE MOST THAT HIS

fiancée's fatherless condition could furnish forth. The man was cordial

ENOUGH: HE WAS EVEN PREPARED TO FIND PETER LIKABLE: BUT EVEN MORE ON THAT ACCOUNT TO MEASURE HIS RELATION TO MISS GOODWARD IN TERMS OF its being a "good thing."

"It's not, you know," his host couldn't forebear to remind him, "exactly the sort of a marriage we expected of Eunice, but if the girl is satisfied.——"

"If I hadn't satisfied myself on that point——" Peter reminded him in his turn.

"Quite so, quite so ... girls have notions sometimes; one never quite knows ... You'll keep on with your—just what is it you do such tremendoous things with, one hears of course that you do do them ——"

"Real estate, brokerage," Peter enlichtened him. "I shall certainly keep on with it. Isn't one supposed to have all the more need of it.

when there's an establishment to keep up?"

THE SYMBOL WAVED A DEFRECATING HAND. "YOU'LL FIND IT RATHER AN COOLPATION TO KEEP UP WITH ELINGE, I'M THINKING. I'VE A NOTION SHE'LL GO IT, ONCE SHE HAS THE CHANCE."

"IF BY GOING IT, YOU MEAN GOING OUT A GREAT DEAL, SEEING THE WORLD AND HAVING IT IN TO SEE HER, WELL, WHY SHOULDN'T SHE, SO LONG AS I HAVE THE PRICE?" HE COULD ONLY TAKE IT GOOD-NATUREDLY. IT WAS AMUSING WHEN YOU CAME TO THINK OF IT, THAT A MAN WHO WOULD CONTRIBUTE TO THE SUM OF HIS WIFE'S FUTURE PERHAPS, THE PRICE OF A SILVER TEA SALVER, SHOULD SO HOLD HIM TO ACCOUNT FOR IT. NEVERTHELESS THE TALK LEFT A FAINT SAVOUR OF DRYNESS. IT WAS PART OF HIS NEW PRICE IN HIMSELF AS A POSSESSION OF HERS THAT HE SHOULD IN ALL THINGS COME UP TO THE MEASURE OF MEN. BUT

or bad, which could be made to answer for her happiness.

WALKING HOME BY THE RIVER TO AVOID AS FAR AS POSSIBLE THE BAKED,
OVEN-SMELLING STREETS, HE WAS AWARE HOW STRANGELY THE WHOLE EARTH

THE ONE THING WHICH SHOULD JUSTIFY HIS BEING SO TICKETED AND SET ASIDE BY THEM AS THE PROVIDER, THE FOOTER-UP OF ACCOUNTS, WAS THE ASSURANCE WHICH ONLY SHE COULD GIVE, OF HIS BEING THE ONE THING, GOOD SEEING HER. AT THE CORE OF A GREAT LIGHT AND HARMONY, AND WALKING ALONE IN IT. IF JUST LOVING HER HAD BEEN SUFFICIENT COCCUPATION FOR HIS BRIFE COURTSHP, FOR THE PRESENT IT FAILED HIM. FOR HE WAS NOT ONLY ALONE BUT. LONELY. HE SAW HER SWEPT ASIDE BY THE CALCULATING CROWD-STRANGE THAT ELLEN AND CLARICE SHOULD BE A PART OF IT-NOT ONLY OUT OF REACH OF HIS LIVE PASSION, BUT BEYOND ALL SPEECH, ALONE IN HIS ROOM HE FELT SUDDENLY FAINT FOR THE WANT OF HER. HE TURNED OFF THE LIGHT WITH WHICH HE HAD FIRST FLOODED IT. FOR THE FLARE OF THE STREET CAME FEEBLY IN THROUGH THE SUMMER LEAFAGE, AND SAT SENSING THE NEED OF HER AS A THING TO BE HANDLED AND MEASURED. A BENUMBING, SUFFOCATING PRESENCE, AS HE SAT, A SOUND OF MUSIC FLOATED BY, AND A THIN PENOL OF LIGHT FROM A PLEASURE BARGE ON THE RIVER FLITTED FROM WINDOW TO WINDOW. TRAVELLING THE GILT LINE OF A PICTURE-FRAME AND THE DARK BLOCK OF A PICTURE THAT HUNG OVER HIS BED. AND AS IT TOUCHED IN PASSING THE HIGH RAMPING FIGURE OF A KNIGHT IN ARMOUR. THE OLD MAGIC WORKED. HE FELT HIMSELF FLUNG AS IT WERE ACROSS GREAT DISTANCES, AND DIZZY WITH THE TURN, TO HER SIDE. HE WAS THERE TO MAINTAIN IN THE FACE OF ALL WORLDLY RECKONING, THE EXCLUDING, SPIRITUAL QUALITY OF THEIR RELATION. THE MORE HIS ENGAGEMENT TO EUNICE GOODWARD FAILED OF BEING THE USUAL. THE EXPECTED THING, THE MORE AUTHORITY IT DERIVED FOR ITS SUPERIVAL SOURCES. IT TOOK THE COLOUR OF TRUE ROMANCE FROM ITS UNLIKELIHOOD. PETER TURNED ON THE LIGHT, AND drawing paper to him, began to write. "LOVELY LADY," THE LETTER BEGAN, AND AS IF THE WORDS HAD BEEN AN INCANTATION. THE ROOM WAS FULL AND PALPITATING WITH HIS STORED-UP DREAMS. THEY CAME WAKING AND CROWDING TO FILL OUT THE MEASURE OF HIS UNCONSUMMATED PASSION, AND THEY HAD ALL ONE FACE AND ONE likeness. Late, late he was still going on with it....

ACHED FOR HER. HE WAS HERE WALKING. AS HE HAD BEEN SINCE HIS FIRST.

"And so," he wrote, "I have come to the part of the story that was not in the picture, that I never knew. The dragon is slain and the knight has just begun to understand that the Princess for whom it was done

IS STILL A PRINCESS; AND THOUGH YOU HAVE FOUGHT AND BLED FOR THEM,
PRINCESSES MUST BE APPROACHED HUMBLY, AND HE DID NOT KNOW IN THE

LEAST HOW TO GO ABOUT IT FOR IN ALL HIS LIFE THE KNIGHT COULD NEVER HAVE

DARING TO SO MUCH AS CALL HER ATTENTION TO IT. FOR THOUGH HE KNOWS VERY WELL THAT IT IS QUITE ENOUGH TO HOPE FOR AND MORE THAN HE DESERVES. TO BE ABLE TO SPEND HIS WHOLE LIFE SERVING HER. LOVE, GREAT LOVE SUCH AS ONE MAY HAVE FOR PRINCESSES, ACHES, ACHES, MY DEAR, AND NEEDS A COMFORTING TOUCH SOMETIMES AND A WORD OF RECOGNITION TO MAKE IT beat more steadily and more serviceably for every day." HE WENT OUT THAT NIGHT TO POST HIS LETTER WHEN IT WAS DONE, FOR THOUGH

SPOKEN TO ONE BEFORE. YOU HAVE TO THINK OF THAT WHEN YOU THINK OF HIM AT ALL. AND OF HOW HE MUST STAND EVEN WITH HIS HEART AT HER FEET. HARDLY

THERE WAS NOT TIME FOR AN ANSWER TO IT. HE WAS GOING DOWN TO HER ON SATURDAY, HE LIKED TO THINK OF IT RUNNING BEFORE HIM AS A TORCH TO LIGHT THE WAY WHICH, EVEN WHILE HE SLEPT, HE WAS SO HAPPILY TRAVERSING, HE WAS QUITE TREMBLING WITH THE JOURNEY HE HAD COME, WHEN ON SATURDAY SHE MET HIM. FLOATING IN SUMMER DRAPERIES AND HOLDING OUT A SLIM ringed hand, and a cool cheek to glance past his lips like a swallow. "You had my letter, dear?"

"Such a lovely letter. Peter. I couldn't think of trying to answer it."

"OH, IT WASN'T TO BE ANSWERED—AT LEAST NOT BY ANOTHER——" HE

released her lest she should be troubled by his trembling.

"I SHOULD THINK NOT!" SHE WAS MORE THAN GRACIOUS TO HIM. "It'S A WONDER TO ME, PETER, YOU NEVER THOUGHT OF WRITING. YOU HAVE SUCH A

BEAUTIFUL VOCABULARY." BUT EVEN THAT DID NOT DAUNT HIM, FOR HE KNEW AS SOON AS HE HAD LOOKED ON HER AGAIN, THAT LOVING EUNICE GOODWARD

was enough of an occupation.



THE SENIOR PARTNER OF WEATHERAL, LESSING & CO., WAS EXACTLY THE SORT OF MAN, WHEN HIS PHYSICIANS ORDERED HIM ABROAD FOR TWO YEARS, WITH THE INTIMATION THAT THERE MIGHT EVEN WORSE HAPPEN TO HIM. TO MAKE SO LITTLE FUSS ABOUT IT THAT HE GOT FOUR INCHES OF TYPE IN A LEADING PAPER THE MORNING OF HIS DEPARTURE AND VERY LITTLE MORE. LESSING WOLLD CERTAINLY HAVE BEEN AT THE STEAMER TO SEE HIM OFF. EXCEPT FOR BEING SO MUCH TAKEN UP WITH ADJUSTMENTS OF THE BUSINESS MADE NECESSARY BY PETER'S GOING OUT OF IT; AND HIS SISTER ELLEN NEVER WENT OUT IN FOGGY WEATHER SELDOM SO FAR FROM THE HOUSE IN ANY CASE. BESIDES, SHE DECLARED THAT IF SHE ONCE SAW PETER DISAPPEARING DOWN THE WIDENING water she should never be able to rid herself of the notion of his being QUITE OVERWHELMED BY IT, WHEREAS IF HE SENT ON HIS TRUNKS THE DAY BEFORE, AND WALKED QUETLY OUT IN THE MORNING WITH HIS SUTCASE. SHE COULD PERSUADE HERSELF THAT HE HAD MERRLY RUN DOWN TO BLOOMBURY FOR A FEW DAYS AND WOULD BE BACK ON MONDAY. AND HAVING MANAGED HIS LEAVE-TAKING AS HE DID MOST PERSONAL MATTERS, TO PLEASE ELLEN. WHO THOUGH SHE HAD NEVER BEEN CREDITED WITH AN IMAGINATION. SEEVED LIKELY TO DEVELOP ONE IN THE EXIGENCIES OF GETTING ALONG WITHOUT PETER. HE HAD NO SPASE OF HAVING DONE ANYTHING OTHER THAN TO PLEASE HIMSELF. HE FOUND A MAN TO CARRY HIS SUTCASE AS SOON AS HE WAS OUT.

HINSELF. THE FOUND A MAIN TO CARRY HIS SUITCASE AS SOON AS HE WAS COT OF THE HOUSE, AND WALKED THE WHOLE WAY TO THE STEAMER, FOR IF ONE HAS BEEN ORDERED OUT OF ALL ACTIVITY THERE IS STILL A CERTAIN SATISFACTION IN going out on your own feet.

IT WAS AN EXTREMELY ILL-CONSIDERED DAY, WET FOG DRAWN UP TO THE HIGH SHOULDERING ROOFS AND SHRUGGED OFF, LIKE A NERVOUS WOMAN'S SHAWL.

BUT WHETHER IT SULKED OVER HIS DEPARTURE OR SMILED ON HIM FOR REMEMBRANCE, WOULD NOT HAVE MADE ANY DIFFERENCE TO PETER, WHO, WHATEVER THE PAPERS SAID OF THE REASON FOR HIS GOING ABROAD, KNEW THAT THERE WOULD BE NEITHER SHADE NOR SHINE FOR HIM, NOR PRINCIPALITIES NOR PROMERS UNTIL HE HAD FOUND AGAIN THE HOUSE OF THE SHINING WALLS.

straightest route might not lie in that direction, into the greasy, shallow HOLLOWS OF THE HARBOUR WATER, AT THE VERY MOMENT WHEN THE BURTON HENDERSONS, OVER THEIR VERY LATE COFFEE, HAD DISCOVERED THE ITEM OF his departure.

MRS. HENDERSON BAI ANCED HER SPOON ON THE FYCE OF HER OLD WHILE HER.

husband read the paragraph aloud to her.

AS SOON AS HE HAD BESTOMED HIS BELONGINGS IN HIS STATEROOM, HE WENT OUT ON THE SIDE OF THE DECK FARTHEST FROM THE GROUPS OF LEAVE-TAKING. AND STOOD STARING DOWN, AS IF HE CONSIDERED WHETHER THE

"YOU DON'T SUPPOSE," SHE SAID, AS IF IT MOHT BE AN INTERESTING EVEN IF regrettable possibility, "that I—THAT OUR AFFAIR—HAD ANYTHING TO DO WITH it?"
"If it did," admitted her husband, with the air of not thinking it likely, but

PROBABLY SERVED HM RIGHT, "IT HAS TAKEN A LONG TIME TO GET AT HIM. TWO years, isn't it, since you threw him over for a better man?"

"OH, I'M NOT SO SURE OF YOUR BEING A BETTER MAN, BERTIE, I LIKED YOU

better—"

Mr. Burton Henderson accepted his wife's amendment with complacency.

COMPRISED OF MONEY OR IST THAT PREVIOUS THE DISTINCTION. MEN LIKE THAT
HAVE A SORT OF MONEY OR IST THAT PREVIOUS THE ORDINARY PREOPERIONS.

HAVE A SORT OF MONEY CRUST THAT PREVENTS THE ORDINARY PERCEPTIONS FROM GETTING THROUGH TO THEM." THIS ILLUSTRATION APPEARED ON SECOND THOUGHTS SO ILLUMINATING THAT IT CARRIED HIM A LITTLE FURTHER. "PERHARS THAT'S THE REASON IT HAS TAKEN HIM SO LONG TO TUMBLE AFTER HE HAS BEEN HIT; IT HAS JUST GOT THROUGH TO HIM. IT WOULD BE INTERESTING TO KNOW, though, if he is still a little in love with you."

THERE WAS A FAIR AMOUNT OF SPECULATION IN MR. BURTON HENDERSON'S tone that did not appear to have its seat in any apprehension.

"Just as if you rather hoped it," his wife protested.

"Well. I was only wondering if his health is so bad as the papers say -T SELDOM IS. YOU KNOW-BUT IF HE WERE TO GO OFF ALL OF A SUDDEN ONE OF THESE DAYS. WHETHER HE MIGHTN'T TAKE IT INTO HIS HEAD NOW TO LEAVE you a legacy." "I don't believe it was personal enough with Peter for that. It wasn't me HE WANTED SO MUCH AS JUST TO BE MARRIED. AND. BESIDES. I DID COME DOWN ON HIM RATHER HARD." MRS. BURTON HENDERSON SMLED A LITTLE REMINISCENTLY AS IF SHE STILL SAW HERSELE IN THE PROCESS OF COMING DOWN. on Peter and thought rather well of it. "Well, anyway," Her Husband Finished, "We could have Managed With a legacy." "YES, WE DO NEED MONEY DREADFULLY, DON'T WE, BERTIE?" SHE SIGHED. "But I don't believe I had anything to do with it." THAT WAS ALL VERY WELL FOR MRS. BURTON HENDERSON, BUT PETER'S SISTER. ELLEN HAD A DIFFERENT OPINON. "PETER" SHE HAD SAID THE EVENING AFTER PETER HAD SENT HIS TRUNK OUT OF THE HOUSE AND LOCKED UP HIS SUITCASE TO KEEP HER FROM PUTTING ANYTHING MORE INTO IT. "YOU'RE NOT her, are you? You're not going to take that abroad with you."

"No, ELLEN, I HAVEN'T THOUGHT OF HER FOR A LONG TIME EXCEPT TO WISH HER happiness. You mustn't let that worry you."

"JUST THE SAME," SAID ELLEN, "F ANYTHING HAPPENS TO YOU OVER THERE—IF you never come back to me, I shall never forgive her."

"I shall come back. I am sorry you should feel so bitter about it."

"I shall come back. I am sorry you should feel so bitter about it."

HE COULD NOT, ESPECIALLY NOW THAT IT WAS GONE, VERY WELL EXPLAIN TO

ELLEN ABOUT THE HOUSE, FOR ALL THE YEARS THAT IT HAD STOOD THERE JUST

BEYOND THE EDGE OF DREAMS WITH THE GARDEN SPREAD AROUND IT AND A LOVELY WOOD BEFORE, SHE HAD NEVER HEARD OF IT. THERE HAD BEEN SO MANY WAYS TO IT ONCE, PATHS TO IT BEGAN IN PICTURES, GREAT TOMERED

GATES OF MUSIC GAVE UPON ITS AVENUES, AND IF HE HAD NOT SPOKEN OF IT,
IT WAS BECAUSE AS HE HAD MADE HIMSELF BELIEVE WHEN SHE DID COMF.

THAT HE KNEW NOW FOR A CERTAINTY THERE HAD NEVER BEEN ANY HOUSE AND the certainty made him ridiculous. IT HAD BEEN RATHER THE WORSE THAT, WITH ALL THE SUDDENNESS OF THIS DISCOVERY. HE HAD NOT BEEN ABLE TO AVOID THE HABIT OF SETTING OUT FOR IT. SEEKING IN DREAMS THE RELIEF OF DESOLATION IN KNOWING THAT NO DREAMS COULD COME. AS OFTEN AS HE HEARD MUSIC OR SAW IN THE SOFT TURN OF A CHEEK OR THE SLENDER LINE OF A WRIST. WHAT HAD MOVED HIM SO IN HERS HE FELT HIMSELF URGED FORWARD ON OLD TRAILS. ONLY TO BE SCARED FROM THEM BY THE APPARTION OF HIMSELF AS FLINGE HAD BYOKED IT FROM HER BRIGHT SURPASSING SURFACES. AS A MAN UNACCOMPLISHED IN PASSION. UNPROVOCATIVE. ALL THE GATES TO THE HOUSE OPENED LPON DREADFUL HOLLOWS OF SELF-DESPISING INTO WHICH PETER FELL AND FLOUNDERED. SO THAT HE TOOK TO GOING THAT WAY AS LITTLE AS POSSIBLE. TAKING WIDE CIRCUITS ABOUT IT CONTINUALLY IN THE WAY OF BUSINESS. BEING RATHER PLEASED WITH HIMSELE WHEN AT THE END OF TWO YEARS HE COULD NO LONGER FEEL ANY PANG OF LOSS NOR ANY REVEWBERING THRILL OF WHAT THE HOUSE HAD BEEN-LINTIL HE DISCOVERED THAT ALSO HE COULD NOT FEEL SOME OTHER THINGS. THE PEN BETWEEN HIS FINGERS AND THE RISE OF THE STAIRS UNDER HIM. HE FORGOT Eunice Goodward, and then one day he forgot to go home after office HOURS, AND THEY FOUND HIM SITTING STILL AT HIS DESK IN THE DARK, TRYING TO REMEMBER WHETHER HE OLICHT TO PLIT DOWN THE BLOTTING-PAD AND THE PAPER WEIGHT ON TOP OF THAT, OR IF, ON THE WHOLE, IT WERE NOT BETTER TO put the paper weight, as being the heavier article, first. IT WAS AFTER THAT THE DOCTOR TOLD HIM TO GO AS FAR AWAY FROM HIS business as possible and keep on staying away. "BUT IF I AM GOING TO DIE, DOCTOR," PETER CAREFULLY EXPLAINED, "I WOULD much rather do it in my own country." "Ah," the doctor warned him, "that's just the difficulty. You won't die."

THAT EUNCE GOODWARD WOULD COME INTO IT OF FIRST RIGHT. HE COULD NOT HAVE BLAMED HER FOR NOT WISHING TO LIVE IN IT—FROM THE FIRST HE HAD NEVER BLAMED HER. HE MIGHT HAVE MANAGED EVEN HAD SHE FULLED IT about his fars to rebuild IT IN SOME FASHON, BUT THIS WAS THE BITTEREST. BECAUSE THE DATE OF SAILING HAPPENED TO BE CONVENIENT. BUT HE KNEW. AS HE STOOD LOOKING DOWN AT THE SURFACE OF THE WATER, ROUGH-HEWN BY THE WIND. THAT WHATEVER THE DOCTOR SAID TO LESSING, OR ELLEN SURMSED. HE WOULD GET NO GOOD THERE EXCEPT AS IT SHOWED HIM THE WAY TO THE House of the Shining Walls. HE DID NOT REMEMBER WHERE IN THE BLIND POINTLESS RING THROUGH WHICH

AND THAT WAS HOW PETER HAPPENED TO BE LEANING OVER THE FORWARD RAIL OF AN ATLANTIC STEAMER ON HIS WAY TO ITALY, WHICH HE HAD CHOSEN

THE STEAMER CHUGGED AND WALLOWED AS THOUGH IT WERE A SUPERIOR SORT.

OF WATER BEETLE AND THE HORIZON A CIRCLE OF ITS OWN MAKING, HE BEGAN TO GET SUFFICIENTLY ACQUAINTED WITH HIS FELLOW PASSENGERS. TO UNDERSTAND THAT THEY WERE MOST OF THEM GOING ABROAD IN THE INTEREST. OF UNREALIZED ESTATES, AND ABOUNDED IN CONFIDENCE. TO SEE THEM forever forward and agaze at the lit shores of Spain and the Islands of

DESIRE ROUSED IN HIM THE FAINT SAVOUR OF EXPECTATION. WHICH HOWEVER, DID NOT PREVENT HIM FROM FINDING NAPLES SQUALID, AND ROVE, WHERE HE ARRIVED IN THE MIDDLE OF THE TOURIST SEASON, TOO MODERN IN A CHEAP, SECOND-RATE SORT OF WAY. HE COULD REVENBER WHEN ROME HAD FURNISHED SOME EXCELLENT COMPANY FOR THE HOUSE, AND SUFFERED IN THE PLACES OF RENOWN AN INDETERMINABLE PANG LIKE THE ACHE OF AN

AMPUTATED STUMP. IT SEEMED. ON OCCASION, AS IF THE OLD TRAILS MIGHT LIE. DOWN THE HOLLOW OF THE FORUM, UNDER THE ARCH OF THAT BROKEN aqueduct, beside the dark Volsinan mere but when Peter arrived at ANY OF THESE PLACES HE FOUND THEM PREPOSSESSED BY GERMANS GABBLING OUT OF Baedekers. THE SISTINE CHAPEL MADE THE BACK OF HIS NECK ACHE AND HE CAME NO NEARER THAN SEVEN TOURISTS TO THE NOBLE quietude of the Vatican can marbles.

THEN HE WENT INTO THE COUNTRY AND SAW THE GRAY OF THE OLIVES ABOVE

GARDEN OF THE VILLA D'ESTE. AND REMEMBERED OTHER THINGS. HE

"I MUST REVENBER." SAID PETER TO HIMSBLE. "THAT I AM A VERY SICK MAN. and crowds annov me."

THE SPRINGING GRASS. LIKE THE SILVER BLOOM ON A GREEN PLUM. AND BEGAN to experience the pangs of recovery. He found Hadrian's Villa and the CYPRESSES AND THE FOUNTAIN'S SOFT INCESSANT RAIN—AS IT HAD BEEN IN THE HOUSE. AS IT WAS IN THE HOUSE. FOR HE UNDERSTOOD IN ITALY WHAT WAS STILL THE MOST BITTER TO KNOW, THAT THOUGH IT MIGHT YET BE SOMEWHERE IN THE WORLD. HE WAS NEVER TO FIND IT ANY MORE. TOWARD ALL THAT ONCE HAD LED HIM THITHER. HIS SENSE WAS LOCKED AND SEALED. HE REVENBERED EUNICE GOODWARD-THE FACT OF HER-HOW TALL SHE WAS AS SHE WALKED BESIDE HIM-BUT NOT HOW AT THE SOFT BRUSHING OF HER HAIR AS SHE TURNED, HIS BLOOD HAD SUNG TO HER; NOR ALL THE WEEKS OF THEIR ENGAGEMENT LIKE A MORNING FULL OF WINGS. AND HE COULD NOT YET RECALL SO MUCH AS THE BARE REASONS FOR HER BREAK WITH HIM EXCEPT THAT they had been unhappy ones. IT HAD BEEN A PART OF A LONG PLAN THAT HE AND EUNICE SHOULD HAVE SEEN. TALY TOGETHER, BUT FOR THE MOMENT HE DID NOT WISH HER THERE. HE WAS SURE SHE WOULD HAVE BEEN IN THE WAY OF HIS GETTING SOMETHING THAT GLIMMERED AT HIM FROM THE COIGN OF CASTELLATED WALLS ALL AWASH ABOUT THEIR BASE WITH PURPLED SHADOW. THAT STROVE TO SAY ITSELF IN INTRICATE FINE TRACERY OF TOWER AND SHRINE, AND FAILED AND FELL AWAY BEFORE THE sodden quality of his mind. SO HE DRIFTED NORTHWARD WITH THE SPRING, AND SAW THE ANEWONES BLOWING AND THE BLOOMY VIOLET WONDER THE WORLD. SUFFERING INCREDIBLE ACHING INTIMATIONS OF THE RECRUDESCENCE OF DESIRE. AFTERWARD HE CAME TO FLORENCE, WHERE HE HAD HEARD THERE WERE PICTURES. AND HOPED TO HAVE SOME PEACE: BUT AT FLORENCE THEY WERE ALL TOO. BLISY BEING PAINTED OR PRAYED TO, THE REMOTE MADONNAS, THE WOUNDED

REMEMBERED THE FLAT MALACHTE-COLOURED POOLS. THE DEFINITE. POINTED

SAINTS, THE COMFORTABLE PLUMP VENUSES; THE LEAN CHRISTS TOO STUPETIED WITH CANDLE SMOKE TO TAKE ANY ACCOUNT OF AN AMERICAN

GENTLEWAN IN A PLAIN BUSINESS SUIT. WHO LOOKED HOWELY AND ILL AND COMPETENT. SOMETIMES IN SANTA CROCE OR IN THE LONG GALLERY OVER THE

BRIDGE. THE NOISE OF THE CITY WOULD REMOVE FROM HIM AND THE FACES WOULD WAVER AND LEAN OUT OF THEIR FRAMES. AS IF, HAD THE OCCASION

ALLOWED. THEY WOULD HAVE SAID THE WORD TO SET HIM ON HIS WAY. BUT THERE WAS ALWAYS A GUARD ABOUT OR A TOURIST STALKING SOME uncatalogued previand it never came to anything.

WHAT TOO REALLY WANT, SAID A WAN AT HIS HOTEL TO WHOW HE HAD HALF
WHINSICALLY COMPLAINED OF THEIR INARTICULATENESS—ONE OF THOSE
REMARKABLE INDIVIDUALS WHO HAD DONE NOTHING SO SUCCESSFULLY IN SO
MANY CITIES OF EUROPE THAT HE WAS SUPPOSED TO KNOW THE EXACT MONTH
FOR DOING IT MOST DELIGHTFULLY IN ANY ONE OF THEM—"WHAT YOU REALLY WANT
IS VENCE. It'S AN OFF SEASON THERE, YOU'LL MEET NOBODY BUT GERWANS, and if you go about in your own gondola you needn't mind them."
SO PETER WENT TO VENCE, AND ON THE WAY THERE HE MET THE GIRL FROM HOME.



VI

HE KNEW AT ONCE THAT SHE WAS FROM HOME. THOUGH AS SHE SAT OPPOSITE HIM WITH THE FINGERS OF HER MENDED GLOVES LACED LINDER HER CHIN AND HER FACE TILENED AWAY TO MISS NO POINT OF THE CYPRESSES AND WARM, ILLUMINED WALLS. THERE WAS NOTHING TO PROVE THAT ANY ONE OF A HUNDRED TOWNS MIGHT NOT HAVE PRODUCED HER. PETER REMEMBERED WHAT SORT OF PEOPLE WORE GLOVES LIKE THAT IN BLOOMBURY—THE MINISTER'S WIFE, THE SCHOOL TEACHER, HIS MOTHER AND ELLEN-AND WAS INSTANTLY SURE SHE WOULD NOT HAVE BEEN TRAVELLING THROUGH TRALY FIRST-CLASS EXCEPT AT THE INSTIGATION OF THE LARGE. WIDOWED AND DISTRUSTFUL WOMAN WITH WHOM SHE GOT ON AT PADUA. THIS LADY, ALSO, PETER UNDERSTOOD VERY WELL. HE THOUGHT IT LIKELY SHE SAT IN ROOKING CHAIRS A GREAT DEAL AT HOME AND TRAVELLED TO IMPROVE HER MIND. SHE HAD. MOREOVER, A GENERAL AIR OF PROCLAIMING THE UNWARRANTABLENESS OF RAILWAY ACQUAINTANCES, WHICH ALONE WOULD HAVE PREVENTED PETER FROM ASKING THE GIRL. AS HE ABSURDLY WANTED TO, IF THEY HAD PAINTED THE NEW SCHOOL-HOUSE YET, AND IF THERE HAD BEEN MUCH WATER THAT YEAR IN Miller's pond.

THERE WAS SOME DELICATE REMINDER ABOUT HER THAT STREAKED THE RICH Italian landscape with vestiges of Bloombury.

HE LOCKED OUT OF THE WINDOW WHERE SHE LOCKED AND SAW THE WHITE STRACHT-SIDED VILLAS CHANGE TO GREEN-SHUTTERED FARMHOUSES, AND FINE OLD ROWAN ROADS LEAD ON TO HARMONY. IT WAS ALL THERE FOR HIM IN ITS UNEXPECTIEDNESS, AS FRESHLY TOUCHING AS THOSE REMINDERS OF HIS MOTHER WHICH HE CAME UPON COCASIONALLY WHERE ELLEN KEPT THEM LAID BY IN LAVENDER, AS IF THE GIRL HAD SHAKEN FROM THE FOLDS OF HER JACKET OF UNINSTAKABLE BLOOMBURY OUT, YOUTH FOR HIM—HIS OWN—ANYBODY'S

As she sat so with her round hat pushed askew by the window-glass.

YOUTH-NO LIMP AND YELLOWED KEEPSAKE, BUT ALL CRISPLY DONE UP AND READY FOR PUTTING ON. SO SHARP FOR THE MOMENT WAS HIS SENSE OF ACCEPTING THE INVITATION TO PUT IT ON WITH HER AS THE BEST POSSIBLE TRAVELLER'S GUISE, ESPECIALLY FOR SEEING VENICE IN. THAT CATCHING THE SPECULATIVE EYE OF THE LARGE LADY TURNED UPON HIM. HE QUALLED SENSIBLY. SHE HAD THE AIR OF HAVING DETECTED HIM IN AN ATTEMPT TO ESTABLISH A RELATION WITH HER COMPANION ON THE GROUND OF THEIR COMMON YOUNGNESS. AND FINDING HERSELF MUCH MORE A MATCH FOR HIM BOTH IN YEARS AND IN RESPECT TO THEIR COMMON ORIGIN. WHATEVER PASSED BETWEEN THE TWO WOMEN, AND SOMETHING DID PASS WORDLESSLY, WITH HARDLY SO MUCH SUBSTANCE AS A LOOK, REVAINED THERE. NOT INTRUSIVELY. BUT AS PROOF THAT WHAT HE HAD BEEN SEEKING WAS STILL GOING ON IN SOME FAR BUT ATTAINABLE PLACE. IT WAS THE FIRST MOVEMENT OF AN ACCOMPLISHED RECOVERY, FOR PETER TO FIND HIMSELF RESISTING THE IMPLICATION OF HIS APPEARANCE IN FAVOUR OF WHAT WAS COMING TO HIM out of the retouched, sensitive surfaces of his past. HE KNEW SO WELL AS HE LOOKED AT THE GIRL, WHAT HAD PRODUCED HER. SHE WAS LEANING A LITTLE FROM THE WINDOW IN A WAY THAT BROUGHT MORE OF HER FACE INTO VIEW, AND THOUGH FROM WHERE HE SAT PETER COULD HAVE VERY LITTLE NOTION OF THE POINTS OF THE NEARING LANDSCAPE. HE KNEW BY WHAT HE SAW OF HER. THAT SOMEWHERE ACROSS THE LOW RUNNELS IN THE WINDY reeds she had caught sight of the "sea birds' nest." HE DID NOT ON THAT ACCOUNT CHANGE HIS POSITION SO THAT HE MIGHT HAVE A GLIMPSE OF THE DARK HILLS OF ARQUA OR THE TOWERS OF VENICE REPEATING THEMSELVES IN THE LUSTROUS, SPACIOUS SEA. SITTING OPPOSITE THE GIRL, HE SAW IN HER FOLLOWING EYES THE SILVER TRAILS OF WATER AND THE DIM PROCESSION DOWN THEM OF OLD LOVES, OLD WARS, OLD SPLENDOURS, MUCH BETTER THAN THE THIN LINE OF THE LANDSCAPE PRESENTED THEM TO HIS WEARY SENSE. HE LEANED BACK AS FAR AS THE STIFF SEAT ALLOWED, WATCHING THE OLD WORLD SHINE ON HER FACE, WHERE THE LOW LIGHT, STRIKING OBLIQUELY ON THE WATER. TURNED IT WHITE ABOVE BLACK SHOALS OF WEED. FOR THE FIRST TIME SINCE HIS ILLNESS HIS MIND SLIPPED THE LEASH OF MAIMED DESIRE.

CARRIAGE. STRUCK INTO THE TRAIL TO THE HOUSE. THE WALLS OF IT ROSE UP STRAIGHT AND SHINING, GILDED PURELY: THE WINDOWS ARCHING TO SUMMER BLUENESS. LET IN WITH THEM THE SMELL OF THE WILDING ROSE AT THE TURN OF the road and the evening clamour of the birds in Bloombury wood. ALL THIS TIME PETER HAD BEEN SITTING IN AN ITALIAN RAILWAY CARRIAGE. KNEE TO KNEE WITH A PIRATE BEARDED AUSTRIAN JEW WHO GAVE HIM THE GREATEST POSSIBLE OCCASION FOR WISHING THE WINDOW OPENED. AND WHEN THE JAR OF THE CHECKED TRAIN DREW HIM INTO CONSCIOUSNESS AGAIN.

AND AS IF IT PARTED FOR HIM THERE BEYOND THE WINDOW OF THE RAILWAY

HE WAS AT A LOSS TO KNOW WHAT HAD SET HIM OFF SO FAR UNTIL HE CAUGHT SIGHT OF THE GIRL. SHE WAS BUTTONING ON HER JACKET WITH FINGERS THAT TREMBLED WITH EXCITEMENT AS SHE CONSTRAINED HERSELE TO THE RECAPITULATION OF THE TWO SUITCASES. THE HAT BOX AND THREE PARCELS WHICH HER COMPANION IN ORDER TO HAVE WELL IN HAND. HAD BEEN

ALTERNATELY PICKING UP AND DROPPING EVER SINCE THEY SIGHTED THE TOWER of San Georgio dark against the sea streaked west. "Two and one is there and there is six and the "Baedeker" and the umbrellas." said the girl. "No. I don't have to look in the address book.

I HAVE IT BY HEART, CASA FROLLI, THE ZATTERA." THEN THE ROAR OF THE TRAIN SPLIT INTO THE SHARP CRIES OF THE facchings THAT CARRIED THEM FORWARD LIKE AN EXPLOSION INTO VENICE AS IT ROSE STATELLY FROM THE RIPPLING

LUSTRE. AROUND IT WOVE THE BLACK RIDERS WITH STILL. COMMUNICATING PROWS. SO BUOYANT. SO MYSTERIOUSLY ALIVE AND PEERING. LIKE SOME SUPERIOR SEA CREATURES RISBN MAGICALLY FROM BELOW THE FRAYED

REFLECTION OF THE STATION LIGHTS. MUCH AS PETER FELT THAT HE OWED TO THE VIVID PRESENCE OF THE GIRL. HIS NEW CAPACITY TO SEE AND FEEL IT SO AS IT BURST UPON THEM. HE HADN'T FOUND THE COURAGE TO ADDRESS HER. SO IT

WAS WITH A DISTINCT SENSE OF DEPRIVATION THAT HE SAW HER WITH HER COMPANION GRASPING THE SIDE OF THE CONDOLA AS IF BY THAT METHOD TO

KEEP IT AFLOAT. DISAPPEARING DOWN THE DIM WATER LANES IN THE DIRECTION.

of the Zattera.



VII

IT WAS THE EVIDENCE OF HOW FAR HE HAD COME ON THE ROAD TO RECOVERY THAT HE WAS ABLE. WHEN HE WOKE IN HIS BED AT THE Britania. TO ALLOW FU PLAY TO THE SUGGESTION THAT HE HAD EXPERIENCED NOTHING MORE THAN THE NATURAL REVERSION OF AGE TO THE BRIGHT VIVIDNESS OF THE PAST, "THOUGH I DIDN'T EXPECT," HE ADMITTED AS HE LAY FRONTING IN THE WIDE OLD MIRRORS. INTERMINABLE REFLECTIONS OF A PILLOW DINTED BY HIS TOO-FARLY WHITENED

HEAD. "I REALLY DID NOT EXPECT TO HAVE IT BEGIN AT FORTY-TWO." HAVING

MADE THIS CONCESSION TO HIS ACCEPTANCE OF HIMSELF AS A MAN DONE WITH YOUNGNESS OF ANY SORT. HE LAY LISTENING TO THE LIP-LAPPING OF THE WATER AND THE SOUNDS THAT CAME UP FROM THE GARDEN JUST BELOW HIM. THE CLINK OF CUPS AND THE WOMEN'S EASY LAUGHTER, AND WONDERED WHAT IT COULD HAVE BEEN ABOUT THAT GIRL TO SET HIM DREAMING OF ALL THE women who had ever interested him. IT DID NOT OCCUR TO HIM THEN, NOR IN THE INTERVAL IN WHICH THE TANG OF HIS DREAM INTERVENED BETWEEN HIM AND THE FULL FLAVOUR OF VENICE. THAT HE

HAD NOT THOUGHT ONCE OF EUNICE GOODWARD. BUT ONLY OF THOSE WHO HAD TOUCHED HIS LIFE WITHOUT HURTING IT. HE WAS SO FAR INDEED FROM THINKING OF WOMEN AGAIN AS BEINGS FROM WHOM HURTS WERE EXPECTED TO COME. THAT HE BLAMED HIMSELF FOR NOT HAVING MADE AN OCCASION OUT OF THEIR ENFORCED COMPANIONSHIP. FOR SPEAKING TO THE GIRL IN THE TRAIN IF HE should meet her again. "I must be twice her age," he told himself determinedly, "and no doubt she has been brought up to be respectful to her elders."

HE LOOKED OUT VERY CAREFULLY, THEREFORE, AS HE DRIFTED ABOUT THE CANALS. FOR A LARGE, WIDOWED LADY AND A GIRL IN A ROUND HAT WHO MIGHT HAVE

COME FROM BLOOMBURY. BUT HE DID NOT FIND HER THAT DAY NOR THE NEXT.

nor the day after, and in the meantime Venice took him. THE INEFFABLE CONSOLATION OF ITS BEAUTY STOLE UPON HIM LIKE THE BREATH OF ITS GARDENS. AS IT ROSE DELICATELY FROM ITS SEA STATION, MURMUROUS LIKE A SHELL WITH THE WHISPER OF JOYOUS ADVENTURE. IT WAS, AS HE TOLD HIMSELF. A PART OF THE SENSE OF RENEWAL WHICH THE GIRL HAD AFFORDED HIM. THAT HE WAS ABLE TO ACCEPT ITS INCOMPARABLE CHARM AS THE EVIDENCE OF THE CONTINUITY OF THE WORLD OF YOUTH AND PASSION. HIS BEING ABLE TO SEE IT SO WAS A SORT OF CONSOLATION FOR HAVING. BY THE illusive quality of his dreams, missed them both on his own account. IT WAS NOT. HOWEVER, UNTIL THE MORNING OF THE FOURTH DAY THAT IT DREW HIM AS HE HAD KNOWN IN THE BEGINNING IT INEVITABLY MUST. TO THE CORE OF Venice, where in the wide piazza full of sleepy light, the great banners DROPPED FROM THEIR STAVES BROAD SPLASHES OF COLOUR BETWEEN THE SLATY DROVES OF DOVES. HIGH OVER THE DOOR THE GOLD HORSES OF LYSIPPUS BREASTED THE GOLD AIR MADE SHADOWLESS BY THE APPROACHING temporale. He was so far then from anything that had to do with his DREAM THAT IT WAS NOT FOR SOME MOMENTS AFTER HE HAD TURNED INTO ST. MARK'S, OBSESSED OF THE SENSE OF LIFE UNCONQUERABLE AND PERVADING.

THAT HE BEGAN TO TAKE NOTICE OF WHAT HE SAW THERE IN THE DIM WONDER.

IT WAS FIRST OF ALL THE SMELL OF STALE INCONSE AND THE MUTTER OF THE MASS,
AND THEN AS HE BOWED INSTINCTIVELY TO THE ELEVATED HOST, THE SNARE OF
THE INTRICATE MOSAIC PAVEMENT; SO BY DEGREES APPREDATION CLEARED
TO THE SEDUCTIVE POLISH OF THE PILLARS, THE ROWS OF STARRED CANDLES, AND
BEYOND THAT TO THE CLEAR GOLD OF THE WALLS, WITH ALL THE PICTURES WROUGHT
flatly upon them ... as it had been in the House!

IT WAS SOME TIME BEFORE HE WAS ABLE TO DRAW UP OUT OF HIS BOYHOOD
MEMORIES, SO NEWLY MADE A GIFT TO HIM, THE STRAY, ELUCIDATING FACT OF
HIS FATHER'S EARLY VISIT TO THIS SPOT AND THE POSSIBILITY OF HIS DREAM

 DIDN'T MAKE ANY LESS OF A WONDER OF HIS KNOWING AS HE STOOD THERE,
PETER WEATHERAL, OF THE FIRM OF WEATHERAL, LESSING & Co., REAL
Estate Brokers, what it was all about.

FATHER LOCKED. AND YET HAD SO FURNISHED ALL HIS IMAGINATION. WHICH

"It's a picture-book of the Heart of Man," he concluded, and no sooner had he shaped this thought in his mind than he heard it littered for

HIM ON THE OPPOSITE SIDE OF THE PILLAR IN A VOICE MADE SOFT BY INDULGENT TENDERNESS, "JUST A GREAT PICTURE-BOOK." HE LEANED FORWARD AT THE SOUND FAR ENOUGH TO HAVE A GLIMPSE OF THE GIRL FROM HOME, AND smilled at her.

"So you've found that out, have you?" It was not strange to find himself addressing her friendlily nor to hear her answer him.

"JUST A PICTURE-BOOK," SHE REPEATED. "IT EXPLAINS SO MUCH. WHAT THE SAINTS WERE TO THEM, AND THE HOLY PERSONAGES. MONKISH TALES TO PREY UPON THER SUPERSTITION, WE WERE TAUGHT. BUT YOU CAN SEE HERE WHAT THEY REALLY WERE, THE WONDER TALES OF A PEOPLE, THE FAIRY WONDER AND THE BLESSED HAPPENNGS COME TRUE AS THEY DO IN DREAMS. OH, IT MUST

"Here in San Marco, yes. But not when I am in Bloombury."
"OH!" CRED PETER, "ARE YOU REALLY FROM BLOOMBURY? I KNEW YOU WERE

have been a good time when the saints were on the earth."

"You believe in them, then?"

FROM UP COUNTRY BUT I HARDLY DARED TO HOPE—IF YOU WILL PERMIT ME——"
He searched for his card which she accepted without looking at it.

"You are Mr. Peter Weatheral, aren't you? Mrs. Merrithew thought she recognized you yesterday."

"Is THAT WHY SHE GLARED AT ME SO? BUT ANYWAY I AM OBLIGED TO HER, though I haven't vestige of a recollection of her."

"A SORRY ONE," SAID PETER. "BUT IF YOU ARE REALLY FROM BLOOMBURY WHY DON'T I REMEMBER YOU? I GO THERE WITH ELLEN EVERY SUMMER, AND she knows everybody." "YES; SHE IS SO KIND. EVERYBODY SAYS THAT. BUT I'M REALLY FROM HARMONY. I TAUGHT THE BLOOMBURY SCHOOL LAST YEAR I AM SAVILLA Dassonville." "Oh. I KNEW YOUR FATHER THEN! NOW THAT I COME TO THINK OF IT, IT WAS HE WHO LAID THE FOUNDATION OF MY GREATNESS," PETER SMLED WHIMSICALLY. "And I knew your mother: she was a very lovely lady." HE REALIZED AS THE GIRL'S EYES FILLED WITH TEARS, THAT THIS MUST HAVE BEEN THE CHILD AT WHOSE BIRTH. HE HAD HEARD. THE MOTHER HAD DIED. "BUT I SUPPOSE WE MUSTIN'T TALK ABOUT BLOOMBURY IN SAN MARCO." HE BLAMED HIS INADVERTENCE. "THOUGH THAT DOESN'T SEEM TO WANT TALKING ABOUT ETHER. WHEN YOU SAID THAT JUST NOW ABOUT ITS BEING A PICTURE-BOOK. I WAS THINKING HOW LIKE IT WAS TO ONE OF THOSE PLACES I USED TO GO TO IN MY YOUTH-YOU KNOW WHERE YOU GO IN YOUR MIND WHEN YOU DON'T LIKE THE PLACE WHERE YOU ARE. SO LIKE, I USED TO CALL IT THE HOUSE of the Shining Walls." "I know," she nodded, "mine is a garden."

"SHE DIDN'T SUPPOSE YOU HAD. HER HUSBAND SOLD YOU SOME LAND ONCE. BUT OF COURSE EVERYBODY IN BLOOMBURY KNOWS THE MR. WEATHERAL WHO

went from there to the city and made his fortune."

THE MASS WAS OVER AND THE CROWD DEPARTING; THEY MOVED FROM PAGE
TO PAGE TO THE STORIED WALL AND IDENTIFIED IN IT THE SPRINGS OF A

"/s?" said Peter. "There's where you have the advantage of me."

"OH!" SHE EXCLAIMED, SPREADING HER HANDS

TOWARD THE FICTURED WALL

AND THE SPRINGING DOMES. "ISN'T THIS THE EVIDENCE THAT IT

is ALWAYS. LET

us look."

"It's like nothing so much," said Miss Dassonville, "as the things I've SEEN THE CHILDREN MAKE AT SCHOOL, WITH BITS OF COLOURED STONE AND BROKEN CHINA AND RAGS OF TINSEL OR WHATEVER TREASURES. LAID OUT IN A pattern on the ground." "Something like that," admitted Peter.

common experience.

"AND THAT'S WHY," SAID MISS DASSONVILLE, "IT DOESN'T MAKE ME FEEL AT all religious, Just—just—maternal." IT APPEARED BY THIS TIME THEY HAD BECOME WELL ENOUGH ACQUAINTED FOR

PETER TO REMARK THAT SHE DIDN'T SEEM TO FEEL LINDER ANY OBLIGATION TO experience the prescribed and traditional thrill. "Well. I'M DIVIDED IN MY MIND. I DON'T WANT TO OVERLOOK ANY OF THE FACTS. AND I WANT TO GIVE THE POOR IMPRISONED THINGS A CHANCE, IF THEY HAVE

ANYTHING TO SAY THAT THE GLIDE BOOKS HAVE MISSED. TO GET IT OFF THEIR MNDS. I'VE ALWAYS HEARD THAT CELEBRITIES GROW TIRED OF BEING FOREVER TAKEN AT THEIR PUBLIC VALUATION. I'VE GOT A Baedeker AND A Hare AND

The Stones of Venice but I neglect them outle as much as I read them, don't you?"

THEY HAD COME DOWN INTO THE NAVE AND SHE WENT ABOUT STROKING THE FAIR MARBLES DELICATELY AS THOUGH THERE SPRANG A CONSCIOUS

THE FASE OF HERS WITH A MOVEMENT OF RELFASE. THEY SPENT SO MUCH TIME IN THE CHURCH THAT WHEN THEY ISSUED ON THE PIAZZA AT LAST IT WAS WITH AMAZEMENT TO DISCERN THAT THE CLOUD WASS WHICH AN HOUR BEFORE HAD PLED ETHEREAL TONES OF BLUBNESS ABOVE FRAULI, LIT CAVERNOUSLY BY

soundless flashes, had dissolved in rain.

"And I haven't even an umbrella." Explained Miss Dassonville with a real dismay.

"BUT I'LL TAKE YOU HOME IN MY GONDOLA," IT APPEARED TO HIM PROVIDENTIALLY PROVIDED FOR THIS CONTINGENCY; "IT IS HERE AT THE Piazzetta." "OH, HAVE YOU A GONDOLA, AND IS IT AS MUCH OF A HELP AS PEOPLE SAY? Mrs. Merrithew hates walking, but we didn't know if we should like it." THEY WHISKED AROUND THE CORNER UNDER THE ARCADE OF THE DUCAL palace, and almost before they reached the traghetto the shower was STAYED AND THE SUN CAME OUT ON THE LUCENT WATER. PETER ALLOWED MISS DASSONVILLE TO GIVE THE DIRECTION LEST SHE SHOULD THINK IT A LIBERTY OF HIM TO HAVE NOTICED AND REMEMBERED IT. BUT HE ADDED SOMETHING TO IT THAT CAUSED HER. AS THEY SWUNG OUT INTO THE CANAL. TO ENTER AN expostulation. "But this is not the way to the Casa Frolli!" "IT'S ONE WAY; BESIDES, IT ISN'T RAINING ANY MORE, AND IF YOU ARE THINKING OF TAKING A GONDOLA YOU OUGHT TO MAKE A TRIAL TRIP OR TWO. AND IT'S WORTH seeing how the palace looks from the canal." The rain began again in a little while, whitening the water; the depth of IT BLACKENED TO THE CLOUD BUT THE SURFACE FROTHED LIKE QUICKSILVER UNDER THE STEADY PATTER. THE AWNING WAS UP AND THEY WERE SAFE AGAINST A WETTING, BUT PETER SAW THE GIRL SHIVER IN THE SLIGHT CHILL, AND LOOKING AT HER MORE ATTENTIVELY HE PERCEIVED THAT SHE MIGHT RECEIVILY HAVE BEEN ILL. THE LIKENESS TO HER MOTHER CAME OUT THEN IN SPITE OF HER PLAINNESS, THE HANDS, THE EYES, THE PLEASANT WAY OF SMILING; IT WAS THAT NO DOUBT which had set him on the trail of his old dreams. He tried, more for the PURPOSE OF AVOIDING IT THAN FOR ANY CURIOSITY. TO REVIEWBER WHAT HE HAD EVER HEARD OF DAVID DASSONVILLE THAT WOULD ACCOUNT FOR HIS DAUGHTER'S TEACHING SCHOOL WHEN SHE EVIDENTLY WASN'T ABLE FOR IT. BUT he talked of Mrs. Merrithew. "I MUST CALL ON HER." HE SAID. "AS SOON AS SHE WILL PERMIT ME. BUT TELL

"IT WAS A MORTGAGE—THOSE POOR MCGURES, YOU KNOW, WERE IN SUCH trouble, and you---" "YES. I WAS ALWAYS NERVOUS ABOUT MORTGAGES. I WAS BITTEN BY ONE ONCE. BUT DEAR ME, I DID NOT EXPECT TO HAVE MY YOUTHFUL INDISCRETIONS

me, what business did I do with her husband?"

coming out like this. What else did she tell you?" THE GIRL LAUGHED DELIGHTEDLY. "WELL, WE DID RATHER TALK YOU OVER. SHE

SAID YOU WERE SUCH A GOOD SON. EVEN WHEN YOU WERE A YOUNG MAN on a salary your mother had a best black silk and a second best."

"Women are the queerest!" Peter commented at large. "It was ALWAYS SUCH A COMFORT. TO ELLEN THAT MOTHER HAD A GOOD SILK TO BE buried in. Now what is there talismanic about silk?"

"It's evidence," she smiled, "and that's what women require most." "Well. I hope Mrs. Merrithew will accept it as evidence that I am a

SUITABLE PERSON TO TAKE YOU OUT IN A GONDOLA THIS EVENING. YOU HAVEN'T seen Venice by night?" "Only as we came from the station. I'm sure she would like you to call,

and I hope she will like the gondola." "Oh, SHE WILL LIKE IT," PETER ASSURED MISS DASSONVILLE AS HE HELPED HER OUT IN FRONT OF THE CASA FROLLI: "IT WILL REMIND HER OF A ROCKING

chair." Mrs. Merrithew did like the gondola: she liked everything:—the

OF SINGING ON THE WATER. THE SOFT BULKS OF FOLIAGE THAT OVERHUNG THEM IN THE NARROW calle, THE SOUNDLESS HATCHET-FACED PROWS THAT ROUNDED ON THEM FROM BEHIND DIM PALACES: AND SHE LIKED THE GONDOLA SO MUCH

SPACIOUS DARK, THE SCUDDING FORMS LIKE FRIGHTENED SWANS, THE SOUND

that she asked Peter "right out" what it cost him.

"WE WOULD HAVE TAKEN ONE OURSELVES," SHE EXPLAINED WITHOUT WAITING,
"ONLY WE DIDN'T FEEL ABLE TO AFFORD IT. FIFTY FRANCS A WEEK THEY WANTED TO
CHARGE US, BUT MAYBE THAT WAS BECAUSE WE WERE AMERICANS; THEY
THINK AMERICANS CAN DO EVERYTHING OVER HERE. BUT I SUPPOSE YOU GET
yours cheap at the hote!?"

"Oh, much cheaper."

"How much?"

"FORTY FRANCS," HAZARDED PETER. "I'M SURE I COULD GET YOU ONE FOR THAT.
UNLESS ... IF YOU DON'T MIND...." HE MADE WHAT HE HADN'T DONE YET
UNDER ANY ORCUMSTANCES, A CASE OUT OF HIS BROKEN HEALTH TO EXPLAIN
HOW BY NOT GETTING UP VERY EARLY AND BY TAKING SOME PRESCRIBED
EXERCISE, GIUSEPPE AND THE GONDOLA HAD TO LIE UNUSED HALF THE

HOW BY NOT GETTING UP VERY EARLY AND BY TAKING SOME PRESCRIBED EXERCISE, GIUSEPPE AND THE GONDOLA HAD TO LIE UNUSED HALF THE MORNINGS, WHICH WAS VERY BAD FOR THEM... "SO," HE PERSUADED THEM, "IF YOU WOULD BE SATISFIED WITH IT FOR HALF A DAY, I WOULD BE VERY MUCH OBLIGED TO YOU IF YOU WOULD TAKE IT ... SHARE AND SHARE ALIKE." THERE WAS AS MUCH HESTATION IN PETER'S SPEECH AS IF IT HAD REALLY BEEN THE FAVOUR HE SEEMED TO MAKE IT, ITHOUGH IN FACT IT GREW OUT OF HIS ATTEMPT

TO FASHION HIS OFFER BY WHAT HE SAW IN THE DUSK OF MISS DIASSONVILLE'S FACE. "IN THE EVENINGS," HE FINISHED, "WE COULD TAKE IT TURN ABOUT.

There are a great many evenings when I don't go out at all."

"Me, too," consented Mrs. Merrithew cheerfully. "I get tired easy, but you and Savilla could go." The proposal appealed to her as Neighbourly, and it was quite in keeping with the character of a

NEG-BOURLY, AND IT WAS QUITE IN KEEPING WITH THE CHARACTER OF A SUCCESSFUL BUSINESS MAN, AS HE WAS PROJECTED ON THE UNDERSTANDING OF BLOOMBURY, TO WISH NOT TO KEEP PAYING FOR A THING OF WHICH HE HAD NO USE. "I THINK WE MIGHT AS WELL CLOSE WITH IT AT ONCE, DON'T YOU, SAVIIIA?"

"IF YOU ARE SURE IT'S ONLY FORTY FRANCS------" MISS DASSONVILLE WAS doubtful

CONSTANTLY EMPLOYED AT THE HOTEL"—WHICH SEEMED SATISFACTORILY TO MAKE WAY FOR THE ARRANGEMENT THAT THE GONDOLA WAS TO CALL FOR THE TWO ladies the next morning.
"GIUSEPPE," WEATHERAL DEVANDED AS HE STEPPED OUT OF THE GONDOLA at the hotel landing, "how much do I pay you?"
"Sixty francs, <i>Signor</i> e."
PETER HAD NO DOUBT THE EXTRA TEN WAS DIVIDED BETWEEN HIS OWN MAN and the gondolier, but he was not thinking of that.
"I HAVE A VERY SHORT MEMORY," HE SAID, "AND I HAVE TOLD THE Signor AND THE Signorina FORTY FRANCS. IF THEY ASK YOU, YOU ARE TO TELL THE FORTY FRANCS; AND LISTEN, BEFFE, EVERY FRANC OVER THAT YOU TELL THEM, I shall deduct from your pourboire when I leave, do you understand?"
"Si, Signore."

"Quite sure," Peter was very prompt. "You see they keep them so

VIII

A MORNING OR TWO AFTER THE ARRANGEMENT ABOUT THE GONDOLA PETER WAS LEANING OVER THE BRIDGE OF SAN MOISE WATCHING THE SUN ON THE COPPER VESSELS THE WOMEN BROUGHT TO THE FOUNTAIN, WHEN HIS MAN CAME TO HIM. THIS LUIGI HE HAD PROVED UP AT NAPLES FOR THE CHIEF EXCELLENCE OF HIS ENGLISH AND A CERTAIN SEPAPHIC BEARING THAT LED PETER TO SAY TO HIM THAT HE WOULD CHEEFFULLY PRY A MUCH LARGER WAGE IF HE COULD ONLY be certain Luigi would not cheat him.

"Oh Signore! In Italy? Impossible!"

"In that case," said Peter, "if you can't be honest with Me, be as honest as you can"—but he had to accept the lifted shoulders and the Raphael smle as his only security. However, lugi had made him comfortable and as he approached him now it was without any misgiving.

"I HAVE JUST SEEN GIUSEPPE AND THE GONDOLA," HE ANNOUNCED. "THEY ARE AT THE PALAZZA REZZONCO, AND AFTER THAT THEY GO TO SAN GEORGIO degli Sclavoni. There are pictures there."

"Oh!" said Peter.

"It is a very little way to the San Georgio," volunteered Luig as they remained, master and man, looking down into the water in the lesurely videtian fashon. "Across the Piazza," sad Luig, "a courle of turns, a bridge or two and there you are," and after a long fause, "The signore is looking very well this morning. Exercise in the sea ar is excellent for the health."

"VERY," SAID PETER. "I SHALL GO FOR A WALK, I THINK. I SHALL NOT NEED YOU,

"SHE MUST BE SOMEWHERE ON THE PREMISES," SAID PETER TO HINSELF.
"NO DOUBT SHE HAS PRESERVED THE TRADITIONS OF HER RACE BY REWAINING INDOORS." HE HAD NOT, HOWEVER, ACCUSTOMED HIS EYES TO THE DUSK OF THE LITTLE ROOM WHEN HE HEARD AT THE LANDING THE SORARE OF THE GONDOLA and the voices of the women disembarking.

"IF WE'D KNOWN YOU WANTED TO COME." EXPLANDED MRS. MERRITHEW

NEVERTHELESS LUGIDID NOT LOSE SIGHT OF HIM UNTIL HE WAS WELL ON HIS WAY TO SAINT GEORGE OF THE SCLAVON WHICH ANNOUNCED ITSELF BY THE RAMPING FAT DRAGON OVER THE DOOR. THERE WAS THE YOUNG KNIGHT RIDING

him down as of old, and still no Princess.

Luigi."

PAPER SCREEN TO GATHER THE LITTLE LIGHT THERE WAS UPON THE MELLOW OLD Carpaccio, he looked upon her with a vague dissatisfaction.

"It's the same dragon and the same young man," he admitted. "I know HIM BY THE HAR AND BY THE DETERMINED EXPRESSION. BUT I'M NOT SURE about the young lady."

HEARTILY, "WE COULD HAVE BROUGHT YOU IN THE BOAT." THAT WAS THE WAY she oftenest spoke of it, and other times it was the gondola.

PETER EXPLAINED HIS OLD ACQUAINTAINCE WITH THE CHARGING SAINT AND HIS OUROSITY ABOUT THE LADY. BUT WHEN THE CUSTODIAN HAD BROUGHT A SILVER

"You are looking for a fairy-tale Princess," Miss Dassonville DECLARED, "BUT YOU HAVE TO REMEMBER THAT THE KNIGHT DIDN'T MARRY THIS one; he only made a Christian of her."

They came back to it again when they had looked at all the others

AND SPECULATED AS TO WHETHER CARPACCIO KNEW HOW FUNNY HE WAS WHEN HE PAINTED SAINT JEROME AMONG THE BRETHREN, AND WHETHER IN the last picture he was really in heaven as Ruskin reported.

"SO YOU THINK." SAID PETER, "SHE'D HAVE BEEN MORE SATISFACTORY IF THE

"THERE'S ONE IN THE BELLE ARTIL THAT'S A LOT BETTER LOOKING TO MY NOTION," contributed Mrs. Merrithew.

"Oh, but that Princess is running away," the girl protested.

painter had thought Saint George meant to marry her?"
"More personal and convincing," the girl maintained.

fragments. It's enough to turn the strongest."

"It does Look a sort of 'After the Battle," Peter admitted. "But I should like to see the other one." AND HE FELL IN VERY READLY WITH Mrs.

"It's what any well brought up young female would be expected to do under the orgunstances," declared the elder Lady; "Just Look at them

MERRITHEWS SUGGESTION THAT HE SHOULD COME IN THE GONDOLA WITH THEM AND DROP INTO THE ACADEMY ON THE WAY HOME. THEY FOUND THE SAINT GEORGE WITH VERY LITTLE TROUBLE AND SAT DOWN ON ONE OF THE RED VELVET

divans, looking a long time at the fleeing lady.

"And you think," said Peter, "she would not have run away?"

"I think she shouldn't; when it's done for her."

"But isn't that—the running away I mean—the evidence of her being

worth doing it for, of her fineness, of her superior delicacy?"

"WELL," MISS DASSON/ILLE WAS NOT DISPOSED TO TAKE IT LIGHTLY, "IF A
WOMAN HAS A RIGHT TO A FINENESS THAT'S BOUGHT AT ANOTHER'S EXPENSE.

THEY CAN'T ALL RUN AWAY, YOU KNOW, AND I CAN'T THINK IT RIGHT FOR A WOMAN

THEY CAN I ALL RUN AWAY, YOU KNOW, AND I CAN I IHINK II RICHII FOR A WOMAN TO EVADE THE DISAGREEABLE THINGS JUST BECAUSE SOME MAN MAKES IT possible."

"I BELIEVE," LAUCHED PETER, "IF YOU HAD BEEN THE PRINCESS YOU WOULD have killed the dragon yourself. You'd have taken a little bomb up your suffer and thrown it at him." He had to take that note to cover a

CONFLISED SENSE HE HAD OF THE CONVERSATION BEING MORE PERTINENT THAN

"Oh. I've been delivered to the dragons before now." She said. "It's GOING ON ALL THE TIME." SHE MOVED A LITTLE AWAY FROM THE PICTURE AS IF to avoid the personal issue. "What beats me." commented Mrs. Merrithew. "is that there has to be

he could at that moment remember a reason for its being.

A YOUNG LADY. YOU'D THINK A LIKELY YOUNG MAN, IF HE MET ONE OF THEM THINGS, WOULD JUST KILL IT ON GENERAL PRINCIPLES. THE SAME AS A SNAKE OR a spider." "OH," SAID PETER. "IT'S CHEELY BECAUSE THEY ARE TERRIFYING TO YOUNG

LADIES THAT WE KILL THEM AT ALL. YES, THERE HAS TO BE A YOUNG LADY." HE WAS AWARE OF AN ACCESSION OF DREARINESS IN THE CERTAINTY THAT IN HIS CASE THERE NEVER COLLD BE A YOUNG LADY. BUT MISS DASSONVILLE AS SHE began to walk toward the entrance gave it another turn. "THERE IS ALWAYS A YOUNG LADY. THE DIFFICULTY IS THAT IT MUST BE A

particular one. No one takes any account of those who were eaten up before the Princess appeared." "BUT YOU MUST GRANT," SAID PETER, WITH AN ODD SENSE OF DEFENDING HIS OWN POSITION. "THAT WHEN ONE GOT DONE WITH A FIGHT LIKE THAT, ONE WOULD be entitled to something particular."

WHEN THE DRAGON IS KILLED SHE SHOULD PROVE TO HAVE GONE AWAY WITH one of the bystanders."

"Oh. IF IT CAME AS A REWARD," SHE LAUGHED. "BUT NOWADAYS WE'VE REVERSED THE PROCESS. ONE MAKES SURE OF THE PRINCESS FIRST, LEST

SOMETHING THAT CLICKED IN PETER'S MIND LED HIM TO LOOK SHARRLY FROM

ONE TO THE OTHER OF THE TWO WOMEN. IN BLOOMBURY THEY HAD A WAY, HE

KNEW, OF NOT MISSING ANY POINT OF THEIR NEIGHBOURS' AFFAIRS, BUT THEIR

FACES EXPRESSED NO TRACE OF AN APPRECIATION OF ANYTHING IN THE

SUBJECT BEING APPLICABLE TO HIS. THE FLICK OF MEMORY PASSED AND LEFT

him wondering why it should be. HE CAUGHT HIMSELF LOOKING COVERTLY AT THE GIRL AS THE GONDOLA SWUNG INTO OPEN WATER. TO DISCOVER IN HER THE SPRINGS OF AN EXPERIENCE SUCH AS LAY AT THE SOURCE OF HIS OWN DESOLATION. HE PERCEIVED INSTEAD UNDER HER SLIGHT APPEARANCE A CERTAIN WARMTH AND COLOUR LIKE A LIGHT BEHIND A BREATHED-ON WINDOW-PANE. ILLNESS. OVERWORK. WHATEVER DRAGON'S BREATH HAD DIMMED HER SURFACES. SHE GAVE THE IMPRESSION OF BEING INWARDLY INFXHALISTIBLY ALIGHT AND ALIVE. SOMETHING IN HER LEAPED TO THE DAY. TO THE STEADY PACING OF THE GONDOLA ON THE SMOOTH WATER TESSELLATED BY THE SUN IN BLUE AND BRONZE AND AMBER, TO THE arched and airy palaces that rose above it.

THE AWNING WAS UP: THERE WAS STRONG SUN AND PLEASANT WIND: FROM HIDDEN GARDENS THEY SMELLED THE OLFANDERS. PETER FELT THE FAINT STIR OF rehabilitation like the breath of passing presences. THE MOOD AUGMENTED IN HIM AS HE DRIFTED LATE THAT EVENING ON THE LAGOON BEYOND THE GUIDECCA, AFTER THE SUN WAS GONE DOWN AND THE SEA AND THE SKY REFLECTED EACH TO EACH. ONE ROSEATE GLOW LIKE A

HOLLOW SHELL OF PEARL. LIT PEAKS OF THE ALPS RANGED IN THE UPPER HEAVEN, AND NEARER THE GREAT DOME OF THE SALUTI SIGNALLED WHITELY: BELOW THEM, ALL THE ISLANDS NEAR AND FAR FLOATED IN TWILIT BLUENESS ON THE FLAT LAGOON. THERE WAS BY TIMES, A LONG SEA SWELL, AND NO SOUND

BUT THE TREAD OF THE OAR BEHIND LIKE A WOWAN'S SILKEN MOTION. IT DREW WITH IT FILMS OF RECOLLECTION IN WHICH HIS MOOD SUSPENDED LIKE GOSSAMER, A MOOD CAPABLE OF GOING ON INDEPENDENTLY OF HIS IDEA OF HIMSELF AS A MAN CUT OFF FROM THOSE EXPERIENCES, INTIMATIONS OF WHICH

pressed upon him everywhere by line and form and colour.

IT HAD COME BACK, THE PRECIOUS INTIMACY OF BEAUTY, WITH THAT FULLNESS SITTING THERE IN THE GONDOLA. HE REALIZED WITH THE INTAKE OF THE BREATH TO EXPRESS IT AND THE CURIOUS THROBBING OF THE PALMS TO GRASP. HE WAS ABLE TO IDENTIFY IN HIS BODILY RESPONSE TO ALL. THAT CHARGED THE DECAYING

DREAMS. IT WAS NO WOMAN, HE TOLD HIMSELF, WHO HAD GONE OFF WITH THE BYSTANDERS WHILE HE HAD BEEN BNGAGED WITH THE DRAGONS OF POVERTY AND OBLIGATION, BUT MERELY THE APPRECIATIONS OF BEAUTY. THERE HAD NEVER BEEN ANY WOMAN, THERE WAS NEVER GOING TO BE. HE BEGAN TO PLAN HOW HE SHOULD EXPLAIN HIS DISCOVERY AND THE BEARING OF IT, TO MISS DASSONVILLE. IT WOULD BE A PITY IF SHE WERE MAKING THE SAME. MISTAKE ABOUT IT. HE LEANED BACK IN THE CLISHONED SEAT AND WATCHED THE SILVER SHINE OF THE PROW DELICATELY PETRING OUT ITS WAY AMONG THE SHADOWY ISLANDS: LAY SO STILL AND ABSORBED THAT HE DID NOT KNOW WHICH WAY THEY WENT NOR WHAT HIS GONDOLIER INQUIRED OF HIM. AND PRESENTLY realized without surprise that the Princess was speaking to him. HE FELT HER FIRST, WARM AND FRIENDLILY, AND THEN HE HEARD HER LAUGHING. He knew she was the Princess though she had no form or likeness. "But which are you?" he whispered to the laughter. "The right one." "The one who stayed or the one who ran away?" "OH, IF YOU DON'T KNOW BY THIS TIME! I HAVE COME TO TAKE YOU TO THE House." "Are you the one who was always there?" "The Lovely Lady: there was never any other." "And shall I go there as I used?" asked Peter, "and be happy there?" "You are free to go; do you not feel it?" "Oh. HERE-I FEEL MANY THINGS. I AM JUST BEGINNING TO UNDERSTAND HOW I came to lose the way to it."

"Are you so sure?"

WONDER OF VENICE WITH OPULENT PERSONALITY, THE SOURCE OF HIS BOYISH

MISTAKE OF THINKING THAT THE HOUSE WAS THE HOUSE OF LOVE, AND IT IS REALLY THE HOUSE OF BEAUTY. I THOUGHT IF I FOUND THE ONE TO LOVE, I SHOULD LIVE IN IT FOREVER. BUT NOW THAT I HAVE FOUND THE WAY BACK TO IT I SEE THAT was a mistake." "How did you find it?" "Well, there is a girl here——" "Ah!" said the Princess.

"Quite." Peter's New-Found Certainty was strong in him. "I made the

to, and that somehow brought me around to the starting-point again." "I SEE," SAID THE PRINCESS; THE LOOK SHE TURNED ON HIM WAS FULL OF A STRANGE, SECRET INTELLIGENCE WHICH AS HE RETURNED IT WITHOUT KNOWING

"SHE IS YOUNG." PETER EXPLAINED: "SHE LOOKS AT THINGS THE WAY I USED

WHAT IT WAS ABOUT, AFFORDED PETER THE GREATEST SATISFACTION. "DO YOU know me now." she said at last, "which one I am?" "The right one, I am sure of that."

CERTAIN THAT IN THE MORNING I

"I KNOW NOW." PETER ANSWERED. "BUT I AM shall not be able to remember." IT WAS TRUE AS PETER HAD SAID THAT THE NEXT MORNING HE WAS IN AS MUCH. DOUBT AS EVER ABOUT THE PRINCESSES. HE THOUGHT HE WOULD GO AND

"But which?"

HAVE A LOOK AT THEM BLIT FORGOT WHAT HE HAD COME FOR ONCE HE HAD ENTERED THE SPACIOUS QUIET OF THE ACADEMY. WARMED STILL FROM HIS CONTACT OF THE NIGHT BEFORE HE FOUND THE PICTURES SENTIENT AND FRIENDLY. HE FOUND TRAILS IN THEM THAT LED HE KNEW NOW WHERE, AND PAINTED waters that lapped the fore-shore of remembrance.

AFTER AN HOUR IN WHICH HE HAD SEEN THE MEANING OF THE PICTURES

OF HIS INTELLIGENCE. HE HEARD THE PRINCESS SAY AT HIS SHOULDER, AT LEAST HE THOUGHT IT MIGHT HAVE BEEN THE PRINCESS FOR THE FIRST WORD OR TWO. UNTIL HETURNED AND SAW MISS DASSONVILLE SHE WAS STARING AT THE DIM old canvases patched with saints, and her eyes were tender. "THEY ARE NOT REALLY SAINTS, YOU KNOW, THEY ARE ONLY A SORT OF HEROGLYPHICS THAT SPELL DEVOTION. IT ISN'T AS THOUGH THEY HAD THE BREATH OF LIFE BREATHED INTO THEM AND COULD COME DOWN FROM THEIR CANVASES. as some of them do." "OH," HE PROTESTED, "DID YOU THINK OF THAT FOR YOURSELF? IT WAS THE Princess who said it to me." "The Princess of the Dragon?"

EMERGE FROM THE FRONTIER OF MYSTICISM WHICH HE KNEW NOW FOR THE REFLECTION OF HIS OWN UNSTABLE STATE. AND PROCEED TOWARD HIM BY WAY

WATER SHINE AND THE ROSY GLOW. I WAS WISHING I HAD INSISTED ON YOUR coming, and all at once there was the Princess."

them.

"The one who staved or the one who ran away?"

"SHE DECLINED TO COMMIT HERSELF. I SUPPOSE IT'S ONE OF THE THINGS A MAN HAS TO FIND OUT." HE EXPERIENCED A GREAT LIFT OF HIS SPIRIT IN THE GIRL'S LIGHT ACCEPTANCE OF HIS WHIMSICALITY. IT WAS THE SORT OF THING THAT

"SHE CAME TO ME LAST NIGHT ON THE LAGOON. IT WAS WONDERFUL.—THE

EUNICE GOODWARD USED TO BE AFRAID TO HAVE ANY ONE HEAR HIM SAY LEST THEY SHOULD THINK IT ODD. IT OCCURRED TO HIM AS HE TURNED AND WALKED BESIDE MISS DASSONVILLE THAT IF HE HAD COME TO ITALY WITH

FUNCE THERE MIGHT HAVE BEEN A GREAT DEAL THAT SHE WOULD NOT HAVE LIGHTNESS AS OF EASE AFTER STRAIN, AND YET NOT THINK IT A MERIT OF MISS

liked to hear. He could THINK THINGS OF THAT SORT OF HER NOW WITH A QUEEK DASSONVILLE'S SO TO FASE HIM. THEY WALKED THROUGH THE ROOMS FULL OF THE MORNING COOLNESS, AND LET THE PICTURES SAY WHAT THEY WOULD TO

HAD REACHED A POINT UNDER THE ARTIST'S HAND WHERE THEY BECAME SUDDENLY INDEPENDENT OF HIM AND WENT ABOUT SAYING A GREAT DEAL MORE THAN HE MEANT AND PERHAPS MORE THAN HE COULD UNDERSTAND. I AM SURE THEY MUST HAVE A WORLD OF THEIR OWN OF PICTURE ROCK AND TREE AND STONE, WHERE THEY GO WHEN THEY ARE NOT BEING LOOKED AT ON THEIR CARDVASSES."

"IT IS STRANGE TO ME," SAID THE GIRL, "THE REALITY OF PICTURES; AS IF THEY

"Oh, haven't you found them, then?" "In DREAMS YOU MEAN? NOT IN BLOOMBURY: THEY DON'T GET SO FAR FROM

HOME. ONE OF THESE LITTLE ISLANDS I SUSPECT, THAT LIE SO LOW AND LOOK SO blue and airy."

"Will you go with me in the gondola to discover it?"

"To-niaht?"

"TO-MORROW." HE WAS FULL OF A PLAN TO TAKE HER AND MRS. MERRITHEW TO THE LIDO THAT SAME EVENING TO HAVE DINNER, AND TO COME HOME AFTER MOCHRISE, TO DISCOVER VENICE. SHE AGREED TO THAT, SUBJECT TO MRS.

MOONRISE, TO DISCOVER VENICE. SHE AGREED TO THAT, SUBJECT TO MIRS.

MERRITHEW'S CONSENT, AND THEY WENT OUT TO FIND THAT LADY AT A BEAD SHOP WHERE SHE SPENT A GREAT MANY HOURS IN A STATE OF DELIGHTFUL indecision.

WITH AN EXTRA GONDOLIER—MISS DASSONVILLE HAD STIPLLATED FOR ONE WHO COULD SING—AND CAME HOME IN TIME TO SEE VENICE ALL A-FLOMER, WITH THE CONTINUAL SLITHER OF THE GONDOLAS ABOUT IT LIKE SOME SLIM SORT OF MOTH. THEY EXPLORED SAINT GEORGE OF THE SEA WEED AFTER THAT, TOOK

Mrs. Merrithew proving quite in the mood for it. They went to the Lido

MOTH, THEY EXPLORED SAINT GEORGE OF THE SEA WEED AFTER THAT, TOOK TEA, IN THE PUBLIC GARDENS AND HAD A DAY AT TORCELLO. ON SUCH COCASIONS WHEN PETER AND MRS. MERRITHEW TALKED ARART, THE GOOD LADY WHO GOT ON EXCELLENTLY WITH THE RICH MR. WEATHERAL GREW MORE

THAN COMMUNICATIVE ON THE SUBJECT OF SAVILLA DASSONVILLE. IT WAS NOT THAT SHE TALKED OF THE GIRL SO MUCH NOR SO FREELY, BUT THAT SHE LEFT HIM

WAS A THIN LITTLE WAIF OF A STORY AS IT CAME FROM MRS. MERRITHEW. NEEDING TO BE TAKEN IN AND COMFORTED BEFORE IT WOULD PETER, WHO AS A RICH MAN HAD COME TO HAVE A FAIR DISCERNMENT IN PITABLE CASES. THE FAINT HOPE OF A RESCUE. THERE HAD BEEN, TO BEGIN WITH, THE DEATH OF THE GIRL'S MOTHER AT HER BIRTH, FOLLOWED BY LONG YEARS OF NEGLECT GROWING OUT OF JUST THAT LIKENESS TO THE BELOVED WIFE WHICH FIRST EXCITED HER FATHER'S AVERSION AND AFTERWARD BECAME THE OBJECT OF a jealous, insistent tenderness. AFTER HIS WIFE'S DEATH, DAVE DASSONVILLE HAD LOST HIS GRIP ON HIS PROPERTY AS HE HAD ON ALL THE MEANS OF LIVING. LATER HE WAS VISITED BY A STRINGENCY WHICH MRS. MERRITHEW WAS INCLINED TO IMPLITE TO A PROVIDENCE, WHICH, HOWEVER PROMPT IT HAD BEEN IN THE REPAYMENT OF THE SLIGHT TO THE MOTHERLESS INFANT, HAD SOMEHOW FALLED TO PROTECT HER FROM ITS CONSEQUENCES. SAVILLA'S GIRLHOOD HAD BEEN DEVOTED TO nursing her father to his grave, to which he had gone down panting for release; after that she had taught the village school. THE WINTER BEFORE, TRAMPING THROUGH THE HEAVY SNOW, SHE HAD CONTRACTED A BRONCHITIS THAT HAD DEVELOPED SO ALARMINGLY AS TO DBWAND, BY THE AUTHORITY OF THE LOCAL DOCTOR. "A TRIP SOMEWHERE"-"AND NOBODY," SAID MRS. MERRITHEW, "BUT ME TO GO WITH her." "Not." SHE ADDED. "THAT I'M COMPLAINN', MERRITHEW LEFT ME WELL OFF, AND THERE'S NO DENYIN' TRAVELLIN'S IMPROVIN' TO THE MIND. THOUGH AT MY AGE IT'S SOME WEARIN' TO THE BODY. I'M GLAD." SHE FURTHER CONFIDED TO PETER AT TORCELLO. "SHE TAKES SO TO VENICE. IT'S A LOT MORE COMFORTABLE GOIN

WITH THE SENSE OF HER OWN EXASPERATION AT THE WHOLE PERFORMANCE. IT

about in a gondola. At Rome, now, I nearly run my legs off."

IT WAS LATER WHEN SAVILLA HAD BEEN KEPT AT HOME BY A SLIGHT
INDISPOSITION FROM A SHOWER THAT CAUGHT THEM UNPREPARED, SHE

EXPRESSED HER DOUBT OF A WINTER IN ITALY BEING ANYTHING MORE THAN A

longer stick with which to beat a dog.

"SHE WILL HAVE SPENT ALL HER MONEY ON IT, AND THE SNOW WILL BE JUST AS

DEEP IN BLOOMBURY NEXT YEAR. THERE ISN'T ANYTHING really THE WATTER.

WITH HER, BUT SHE'S JUST TOO FINE FOR IT. IT'S LIKE SEEING A CLUMSY PERSON HANDLIN' ONE OF THEM SPUN GLASS THINGS. THE WAY I HAVE TO SIT STILL AND

SEE PROVIDENCE DEALING WITH SAVILLA DASSONVILLE. IT MAY BE SORT OF sacrilegious to say so, but I declare it gives me the fidgets."

IT OUGHT OF COURSE TO HAVE GIVEN PETER, SEEING. THE INTEREST HE TOOK IN

HER, A LIKE UNEASINESS; BUT THERE WAS SOMETHING IN THE UNMTIGATED
HARDNESS OF HER SITUATION THAT AFFORDED HIM THE SORT OF EASEMENT HE
HAD, INEXPLICABLY, IN THE PLAINNESS OF HER DRESS. HIS MEMORY WAS NOT
WORKING WELL BNOUGH YET FOR HIM TO REALIZE THAT IT WAS RELIEF FROM THE
STRAIN OF THE SECONDARY FEMINITY THAT HAD FLUTTERED AND ALLURED IN

Eunice Goodward.

It was even more unclearly that he recognized that it had been a strain. All this time he had been forgetting her—and how completely

HE HAD FORGOTTEN HER THS NEW FACULTY FOR COMPARISON WAS PROOF—HE HAD STILL BEEN ENSLAVED BY HER APPEARANCE. IT WAS AN APPEARANCE, THAT OF EUNOE'S, WHICH HE ADMIRED STILL IN THE YOUNG AMERICAN WOMEN AT THE EXPENSIVE HOTELS WHERE HE HAD PUT UP, AND ADMITTED AS THE NATURAL. THE INEVITABLE SIGN OF AN INWARD PRECOUSNESS. BUT IF HE

ALLOWED TO HINSELF THAT HE WOULD NEVER HAVE SPOKEN TO SAVILLA
DASSONVILLE THAT DAY AT SAN MARCO, IF SHE HAD BEEN TO THE EYE
ANYTHING THAT EUNICE GOODWARD WAS, HE TOLD HINSELF IT WAS BECAUSE
HE WAS NOT SURE FROM BEHIND WHICH OF THOSE CHARMING AMBLICADES

THE ARROWS OF DESOLATION MIGHT BE SHOT. IF HE GAVE HIMSELF UP NOW TO THE PLAY OF THE GIR.'S LIVE FANCY HE DID SO IN THE SECURITY OF HER PLAINNESS, OUT OF WHICH NO DISTURBING SURPRISES MIGHT COME. AND SHE

LET HIM, IN RESPECT TO HER HARD CONDITIONS, WITHOUT EVEN THE EXCUSE FOR AN ATTITUDE. EUNICE HAD BEEN FOOR IN HER WORLD, AND HAD CARRIED IT WITH JUST THAT ADMIXTURE OF BRIGHT FRANKNESS AND PROUD RESERVE WHICH.

IN HER WORLD, SUPPORTED SUCH A SITUATION WITH MOST CHARM. SHE MADE AS MUCH USE OF HER DIFFICULTIES AS A SPANISH DANCER OF HER SHAWL: BUT SAVILLA DASSONVILLE WAS JUST POOR, AND THAT WAS THE BND OF IT. THAT HE GOT ON WITH HER SO WELL BY THE SIMPLE PROCESS OF TALKING OUT WHATEVER HE WAS MOST INTERESTED IN. OCCURRED TO PETER AS HER NATURAL LIMITATION. IT WAS NOT UNTIL THEY HAD BEEN GOING OUT TOGETHER FOR A WEEK OR MORE. IN SUCH FASHON AS HIS MENDING HEALTH ALLOWED. THAT HE HAD MOMENTS OF REALIZING. IN HER SWIFT APPROPRIATIONS OF VENICE, RICH POSSIBILITIES OF THE PERSONAL RELATIONS WITH WHICH HE BELIEVED HIMSELF FOREVER DONE. ODDLY IT PROVOKED IN HIM THE WISH TO PROTECT, WHEN THE PRACTICAL situation had left him dry and bare. It was the evening of the Serenata. They were all there in the gondola, Mrs. Merrithew and the girl. With Luigi squatting by Giuseppe, not too FAR FROM THE MUSIC FLOAT THAT SPRANG MYSTERIOUSLY FROM THE BLACK WATER IN ARCHING BOUGHS OF RED AND GOLD AND PEARLY ALADDIN'S FRUIT. BEHIND THEM THE LURKING PROWS RUSTLED AND ROCKED DRUNKENLY WITH THE SWELL TO WHICH THEY SEEMED AT TIMES ATTENTIVELY TO LEAN. THEY COULD MAKE OUT HEADS CROWDED IN THE GONDOLAS, AND SILVER GLEAMS OF THE PROWS AS THEY DRIFTED PAST PALACES LIT INTERMITTENTLY BY A RED FLARE THAT WIPED OUT for the moment, the seastain and disfiguring patches of restoration. THEY HAD PASSED THE PALACE OF CAMERLEIGH. THE JEWEL-FRUITED ARBOUR FOLDED AND FURLED UPON ITSELF TO PASS THE SLOW CURVE OF THE RIALTO. AND SUDDENLY, PETER'S ATTENTION, DRAWN MOMENTARILY FROM THE MUSIC, WAS CAUGHT BY THAT OTHER BRIGHT COMPANY LEANING FROM DESERTED BALCONIES. SWARMING LIKE THE SUMMER DRIFT BETWEEN THE PILLARS OF DARK LOGGIAS. THEY WERE ALL THERE, KNIGHTS AND SAINTS AND LADIES, OUT OF PRINT AND PAINT AND MARBLE, AND PRESENTLY HE MADE OUT THE PRINCESS. SHE WAS LEANING OUT OF ONE OF THE HIGH. FLORIATED WINDOWS, LOOKING DOWN ON HIM WITH PLEASED, SECRET UNDERSTANDING AS SHE MIGHT HAVE SMILED FROM

HER PALACE WALLS ON THE FESTIVAL THAT BROUGHT THE YOUNG KNIGHT GEORGE HOME WITH THE CONQUERED DRAGON. IT WAS THE COMPRESSED AND PREGNANT MEANING OF HER GAZE THAT DREW HIS OWN UPWARD, AND IT WAS THEN WHEN THE LOVELY LADY TURNED AND WAVED HER HAND AT HIM THAT HE felt the girl stir strangely beside him.

"HOW FULL THE NIGHT IS OF THE SENSE OF PRESENCES," SHE SAID, "AS IF ALL

THE LOVED MARBLES CAME TO LIFE AND THE ADORED HAD LIFT THER canvases. I cannot think but it is so."

"Oh. I am sure of it."

SHE MOVED AGAIN WITH THE VAGUE RESTLESSNESS OF ONE STARED UPON BY INJUNERABLE EYES. "HOW ONE WOULD LIKE TO SPEAK," SHE SAID. "THEY

INNUMERABLE EYES. "HOW ONE WOULD LIKE TO SPEAK," SHE SAID. "THEY seem so near us."

THERE WAS A WARM TIDE OF THAT NEARNESS RISING IN PETER'S BLOOD. AS THE MUSIC FLOWED OUT AGAIN IN SUMMER FULLNESS, HE PUT OUT HIS ARM ALONG THE BACK OF THE SEAT INSTINCTIVELY IN ANSWER TO THE GIR!'S SHY

THE MUSIC FLOWED OUT AGAIN IN SUMMER FULLNESS, HE PUT OUT HIS ARM ALONG THE BACK OF THE SEAT INSTINCTIVELY IN ANSWER TO THE GIRL'S SHY TURNING, THE NATURAL MOVEMENT OF THEIR COMMON EQUITY IN THE NIGHT'S UNITERALIZED WONDER.

IX

"Peter! oh, Peter!"

IT WAS DARK IN THE ROOM WHEN PETER AWOKE, BUT HE KNEW IT WAS MORNING BY THE SALT SMELL WHICH HE THOUGHT CAME INTO THE ROOM FROM THE COVE BEYOND BLOOMBURY PASTURES, UNTIL HE ROUSED IN HIS BED AND KNEW IT FOR THE SMELL OF THE LAGOONS. HE LOOKED OUT TO SEE THE BEGINNING OF ROSE LIGHT ON THE WORLD AND UNDERSTOOD THAT HE WAS CALLED. HE DID NOT HEAR THE VOICE AGAIN BUT OUT THERE IN THE Shimmering space the call awaited him. It might be the Princess.

A FROMSY GONDOLIER ASLEEP IN HIS GONDOLA. THEY SPOKE SOFTLY, BOTH OF THEM, BEFORE THE MORNING HUSH, AS THEY SMUNG OUT INTO THE OPEN WATER BETWEEN THE TOMERS OF SAN GEORGIO FAIRLY DIM, AND THE PILLARS OF THE SAINTS; THE CITY FLOATED IN A MIST OF BLUENESS, THE DOME OF THE SALUTI faintly pearled.

HE DRESSED AND GOT DOWN QUIETLY INTO THE SHADOWED CITY AND WAKED

"Dove, Signore?" The gondolier feathered his oar.

"Un giro"—Peter waved his arm seaward; the dip of the oar had a stealthy sound in the deserted dawning. They passed the public gardens and saw the sea widen and the morning culcken. Islands swam up out of silver space, took form and colour, and there between the Islands he saw the Girl. She had gotten another oar from Gilseffe and stood delighting in the free motion; her sleeves whee rolled up, her hat was off, her har blen out; alive and plant she bent to the long sweep of it, and her eyes were not the morning wonder. But when she caught sight of peter she looked only at him and he knew that her seens him affearing thus on the shining water was its other and plant her space.

THOUGHT PRIVATELY THAT THE Signore Americano WAS A LITTLE MAD, BUT HE knew now with what manner of madness. THEY DREW CLOSE AND DRIFTED ALONGSIDE. PETER DID NOT TAKE HIS EYES FROM THE GIRL'S EYES LEST FOR HER TO LOOK AWAY EVER SO SLIGHTLY FROM THERE TO HIS FACE WOULD BE TO DISCOVER THAT HE KNEW; AND HE DID NOT KNOW how he stood with himself toward that knowledge. "OH," SHE SAID BREATHLESSLY, "I WANTED YOU—I CALLED YOU—AND YOU came! You did not know where I was and yet you came?" "I heard you calling." SHE LEFT HER OAR AND SAT DOWN: PETER LAID HIS HAND ON THE EDGE OF HER gondola and they drifted side by side.

THE GONDOLIER STEERED STRAIGHT FOR THE GIRL WITHOUT ADVICE, HE HAD

"May I come with you?" he asked presently. SHE MADE A LITTLE GESTURE, PAST ALL SPEECH, PETER HELD UP A HAND FULL OF SILVER TOWARD HIS GONDOLIER AND LAID IT ON THE SEAT AS HE STEPPED LIGHTLY OVER. THE MAN SLID AWAY FROM THEM WITHOUT WORD OR MOTION, AND

TOGETHER THEY FACED THE MORNING. IT WAS ONE THIN WEB OF ROSE AND GOLD. OVER LAKES OF BURNISHED LIGHT; ISLANDS LIFTED IN MIRAGE, FLOATED MRACULOUSLY LIPON THE VERGE OF SPACE. BEHIND THEM THE MAIN AND BANKED LIKE A NEW CREATED WORLD OVER WHICH WAITED THE HOSTS OF THE

ranked Alps. Winged boats from Murano slid through the flat lagoons. THERE WAS VERY LITTLE TO SAY. PETER WAS AWARE CHEFLY. IN WHAT CAME

FROM HER TO HIM. OF THE WISH TO BE VERY TENDER TOWARD IT. OF HAVING IT IN HAND TO SUPPORT HER SECURELY ABOVE THE ABYSS INTO WHICH HE FELT AT THE

LEAST RUDE TOUCH OF HIS. SHE MUST IMMEASURABLY FALL. AT THE BEST HE

COULD BUT KEEP WITH HER THERE AT THE POINT OF HER UNCONSCIOUSNESS BY KNOWING THE TRUTH HIMSELF, AS HE FELT AMAZINGLY THAT HE DID KNOW IT WITH

all the completeness of his stripped and beggared past.

WOMEN SAT MADONNA-WISE AND NURSED THEIR BAMBIN, OR CHERISHING THE RECURRENT HOPE. KNITTED INTERMINABLY. IF HE WANTED ANY EVIDENCE OF WHAT HE ADMITTED BETWEEN THE GIRL AND HIMSELF IT FLASHED OUT FOR HIM IN THE FACES OF THE MARKET WIVES, ON WHOM LABOUR AND MATERNITY SAT NOT too heavily to cloud the primal radiance. It was there in their soft Buon aiomo in the way they did not. As the condola drew beside them. COVER THEIR FRUTTFUL BREASTS FROM HER TENDER EYES. IN THE WAY MOST FALL. THEY GRASPED IN THE HIGH MOOD OF THE forestieri A SUBLIMITY UNTOLICHED BY THE NICETIES OF BARGAINING. A MAN IN THE STATE OF MIND TO WHICH THE GIRL'S VISIBLE SHINE CONFESSED. COULD HARDLY BE EXPECTED TO STICKLE AT THE PRICE OF THE FEW FIGS AND ROSES WHICH SERVED AS AN EASY PASSAGE. FROM THE WONDER OF THEIR MEETING TO THE GROUND OF THEIR ACQUISTOMED. GAY PRETENCES. THEY MADE OF PETER'S PURCHASES OF FRUIT AND FLOWERS A MARKET GARDEN OF THEIR OWN FROM WHICH THEY HAD BUT JUST COME ON HOPEFUL ERRANDS. THEY MADE BELIEVE AGAIN AS BOATS THICKENED LIKE WINGED THINGS IN A SUMMER GARDEN. TO BE BENT UPON DISCOVERY. AND SLID WITH PRETENDED CALITION LINDER THE GREAT SHIPS STATIONED BY THE GIUDECCA. FROM WHICH THEY HEARD SAILORS SINGING. THEY SHOT WITH EXAGGERATED SHIVERS PAST A SLIM CRUISER AND SUDDENLY MISS. Dassonville clutched Peter by the arm. "OH!" SHE CRIED: "Do you see it? That little dark, impudent-looking one, and the flag?" Peter saw: he was not guite, he reminded her, even in the intoxication OF A MORNING ON THE LAGOONS WITH HER. QUITE IN THAT STATE WHERE HE COULDN'T SEE HIS COUNTRY'S FLAG WHEN IT WAS POINTED OUT TO HIM. THEY came alongside with long strokes, and sniffed deliciously.

"AH—UM—UM——" SAID MISS DASSONVILLE. "I KNOW WHAT THAT IS. IT'S HAM AND EGGS. HOW LONG SINCE YOU'VE HAD A REAL AMERICAN

THEY DRIFTED AND SAW THE MORNING WIDEN INTO THE WORKING-DAY. MARKET BOATS PILED WITH FRUIT, FISH IN SHINING HEARS, WOOD BOATS OF ISTRIA, WENT BY WITH MADONNA PAINTED SALLS. AMONG THE CROWDED GOODS THE

"Not since I left the steamer," Peter confessed. "Now if I were to smell hot cakes I shouldn't be able to stand it. I should go aboard her."

Miss Dassonville saluted softly as they went under the bright banner.

"OH, SAY CAN YOU SEE BY THE DAWN'S EARLY LICHT," SHE BEGAN TO SING AND IMMEDIATELY A LARGE, BLOOMING FACE ROSE THROUGH A MIST OF FADED

breakfast?"

"United States, ahoy?" it said.

They came close under and Miss Dassonville halled in return; as soon as the captain saw her face smiling up at him he beamed on it as the women in the boats had done.

WHISKER AT THE PROW AND THEY SAW ALL THE COAST OF MAINE LOOKING DOWN.

on them from the rail of the Merrythought.

"WE SMELLED YOUR BREAKFAST," SHE EXPLAINED, AND THE MAN LAUGHED delightedly.
"I know what kind these Dagoes give ye. Come up and have some."

Peter and the girl consulted with their eyes.

"Are you going to have hot cakes?" she demanded.

"I will if you come; darned if I don't." "We're coming, then."

IT WAS PART OF THE TASK THAT PETER HAD SET HIMSELF, TO PERSEVERE FOR SAVILLA DASSONVILLE THE FILM OF UNCONSCIOUSNESS THAT LAY DELICATELY LIKE

THE BLOOM OF A RARE FRUIT OVER ALL THAT WAS AT THAT MOMENT GOING ON IN HER, THAT MADE HIM HASTEN AS SOON AS CAPTAIN DUNHAM HAD

HER, THAT MADE HIM HASTEN AS SOON AS CAPTAIN D'UNHAM HAD ANNOUNCED HIMSELF, TO INTRODUCE HER PARTICULARLY BY NAME. TO FORESTALL IN THE JOLLY SAILOR THE NATURAL INTERPRETATION OF THEIR APPEARANCE THE GOOD CAPTAIN'S TONGUE TO PROPOSE, NEWLY MARRIED, THEY WERE IN A HOPEFUL WAY TO BE. THE CONSCIOUSNESS OF HIMSELF AS ACCESSORY TO SO DELIGHTFUL AN ARRANGEMENT PASSED FROM THE CAPTAIN TO PETER WITH ALMOST THE OBVIOUSNESS. OF A WINK, AS HE SURRENDERED HIMSELF TO THE charm of the girl's ethereal excitement. HE UNDERSTOOD PERFECTLY THAT HIS NOT BEING ABLE TO FEEL MORE OF A DROP FROM THE PREGNANT MYSTERY OF HER CALL AND HIS HIGH RESPONSE TO IT. TO THE HOWELY INCIDENT OF BREAKFAST, WAS DUE TO MISS DASSONVILLE'S OBLIVIOUSNESS OF ITS BEING ONE. IT WAS FOR HER, IN FACT, NO DROP AT ALL BUT RATHER AS IF THEY HAD BULLED OUT FOR A MOMENT INTO THIS LITTLE SHOAL OF NEIGHBOURLY INTEREST AND COMFORTABLE FOOD. THE BETTER TO LOOK BACK AT THE PERFECT WONDER OF IT, AS FROM THE DECK OF THE Merrythought TOWARD THE FAIR FRONT OF THE DUCAL PALACE AND THE BLUE DOMES OF ST. MARK'S behind the rearing lion. ALTHOUGH HE HAD PARTED FROM HER THAT MORNING WITH NO HINT OF AN ARRANGEMENT FOR A NEXT MEETING. IT HAD BECOME A PART OF THE DAY'S PERFORMANCE FOR PETER TO CALL FOR THE TWO LADIES IN THE AFTERNOON, SO MUCH SO THAT HIS OWN SENSE OF THE UNUSUALNESS OF FINALLY LETTING THE GONDOLA GO OFF WITHOUT HIM, AND HIS PARTICULAR WISH AT THIS JUNCTURE NOT TO MARK HIS INTERCOURSE WITH ANY UNUSUALNESS. LED HIM TO SEND OFF WITH IT AS MANY ROSES AS LUIGI COULD FIND AT THAT SEASON ON THE PIAZZA. AFTERWARD, AS HE RECALLED THAT HE HAD NEVER SENT FLOWERS TO MISS. Dassonville before, and as he had that morning furnished her from THE MARKET BOATS PAST HER PROTESTING LIMITATION. IT WAS PERHAPS A greater emphasis to his desertion. HOWEVER, IT SEEMED THAT THE ROSES AND NOTHING BUT THE ROSES MIGHT SERVE AS A BRIDGE. DELICATE AND DIZZYING, TO SUPPORT THEM FROM THE REALIZATION OF THEIR SITUATION. INTO WHICH HE HAD NO INTENTION OF LETTING MISS DASSONVILLE FALL. HE STAYED IN HIS ROOM MOST OF THAT AFTERNOON.

TOGETHER AT THIS HOUR AND OCCASION, HE HAD TO LEND HIMSELF TO THE ONLY OTHER REASONABLE SURMISE. IF THEY WERE NOT, AS HE SAW IT ON THE TIP OF IT OCCURRED TO HIM AT LAST THAT AT S.T. MARK'S THERE MIGHT BE REFLECTIVE SILENCES AND PERHAPS RESOLUTION. HE FELT IT WARM FROM THE STORED-LIP VENERATION OF THE WORLD. AND THOUGH HE SAID TO HIMSELF. AS HE CLIMBED TO THE GALLERIES, THAT IT WAS TO GIVE HIMSELF THE MORE ROOM TO THINK, HE KNEW THAT IT MUST HAVE BEEN IN HIS MIND ALL THE TIME THAT THE GIRL WAS there. as it was NATURAL SHE SHOULD HAVE COME TO THE PLACE WHERE THEY HAD MET. EVEN BEFORE HE CAUGHT THE OUTLINE OF HER DRESS AGAINST THE PILLAR HE FOUND HIMSELF CROSSING OVER TO THE ORGAN LOFT THE BETTER TO OBSERVE HER. KNOWLEDGE REACHED HIM INCREDIBLY ACROSS THE EMPTY SPACE, AS TO WHAT, OVER AND ABOVE THE PICTURED SAINTS, SHE FACED THERE IN THE VALUET, LIT SO FAINTLY BY THE SHINING OF ITS GOLDEN WALLS. THE SERVICE OF THE BENEDICTION GOING ON IN THE CHURCH BELOW FURNISHED HIM WITH THE FIGURE OF WHAT CAME TO HIM FROM HER AS SHE LAID UP HER THOUGHTS ON AN ALTAR BEFORE THAT MYSTERIOUS INTIMATION OF MATERNITY WHICH PRESAGES IN RIGHT WOMEN THE MOVEMENT OF PASSION. HE FELT HIMSELF CAUGHT UP IN IT PURELY ABOVE ALL SENSE OF HIS PERSONAL insufficiency. BACK IN HIS HOTEL AFTER DINNER HE FOUND HE HAD STILL TO LET THE ROSES

KNOWING THAT HE WAS SHUT UP WITH A VERY GREAT MATTER, NOT ABLE TO FEEL. IT SO BECAUSE OF THE DRYNESS OF HIS HEART, NOR TO THINK WHAT WAS TO BE

done about it because of the lightness of his brain.

IT WAS NOT WHOLLY THEN WITH SURPRISE, SINCE HE FELT HINSELF SO MUCH IN NEED OF SOME COMPELLING TOUCH, THAT HE HEARD, AFTER AN HOUR OF FUTILE battling, the Princess speak to him.

ANSWER FOR HIM AS HE SAT OUT ON HIS BALCONY AND REALIZED ODDLY THAT THOUGH HE HAD NO RIGHT TO GO TO MISS DASSONVILLE AGAIN UNTIL HE HAD THOUGHT OUT TO ITS FURTHERMOST HIS RELATION TO HER. HE COULD.

incontinently, think better in her company.

SHE STOOD JUST BEYOND HIM IN THE SHADOW OF THE WISTARIA THAT WENT UP all the front of the balcony, and called him by his name.

"AH," SAD PETER "I KNOW NOW WHO YOU ARE. YOU ARE THE ONE WHO stayed."
"How did you find out?"

married."

HEDD NOT LOOK AT THE PRINCESS, BUT HE SAW THE SHADOW OF HER THAT THE

"Because the one who ran away was the one he would have

moon made, mixed with the lace of the wistaria leaves, tremble.

"Well." said she. "and what are you going to do about it?"

"You know then ...?"

"I WAS THERE ON THE WATER WITH YOU THIS MORNING.... IT WAS I THAT SHOWED.

you the way, but you had no eyes for anything."

IT WAS THE SWIFT RECURRENT START OF WHAT HE had HAD EYES FOR THAT KEPT

PETER SLENT LONG ENOUGH FOR THE PRINCESS TO HAVE ASKED HIM AGAIN what he was going to do about it, and then——
"The other night—with the music—she knew that I was there?"

"OH—SHE!" HE WAS TAKEN ALL AT ONCE WITH THE COMPLETENESS WITH WHICH IN HIS INTINATE ATTITUDE TO THINGS, SAVILLA DID KNOW. "SHE KNOWS

everything."
"What was there so different about the other one?"

"EVERYTHING ... SHE WAS BEAUTIFUL ... SHE WAS AIR AND FIRE ... SHE MADE the earth rock under me."

"And did you go to her calling?"

"I WOULD HAVE RISEN OUT OF DEATH AND DUST AT HER SLIGHTEST WORD ... I WOULD have followed where her feet went over all the world " "And why did you never?"

"I suppose," said Peter, "it was because she never called."

"This one," suggested the Princess, "would be prettier if she were not so THN; AND SHE WOULDN'T HAVE TO WEAR SHRIWAISTS IF YOU MARRIED HER.

SHE MAKES THEM HERSELF, YOU KNOW. WHY DID THE OTHER ONE RUN

"THAT'S JUST THE DIFFICULTY. I CAN'T REMEMBER." HE WISHED SINCERELY WITHIN HIMSELF THAT HE MIGHT; IT SEEMED IT WOULD HAVE SERVED HIM somehow with Miss Dassonville. "I've been very ill," he apologized.
"Anyway, you'd be getting what everybody wants."

away?"

"And that is——"

"A WOMAN OF YOUR OWN ... UNDERSTANDING AND CARE ... AND CHILDREN. I was in the church with you ... you saw——"
"But I don't want to talk about it."
"What do you want then?"

"To be the prince in a fairy tale, I suppose," Peter sighed.

"OH, YOU'RE ALL OF THAT TO'HER. THE HALF GOD—THE UNMATCHED WONDER.

WHEN SHE WATCHED YOUR COMING ACROSS THE WATTER THIS MORNING.—

KNOW THE LOOK THAT SHOULD GO TO A SLAYER OF DRAGONS. IT SEEMS TO ME," said the Princess severely, "it is you who are running away."

SHE WAS WISE BNOUGH TO LEAVE HIM WITH THAT VIEW OF IT THOUGH IT WAS NOT BY ANY MEANS. LEAVING HIM MORE COMPORTABLE. HE TRIED FOR RELIEF TO

FIGURE HIMSELF AS BY THE PRINCESS' SUGGESTION, HE MUST SEEM TO SAVILLA DASSONVILLE BUT IF HE WAS REALLY SUCH TO HER WHY COULD HE NOT

THEN PLAY THE DELIVERER IN FACT, RESCUE HER FROM UNITENDED ILLNESS, FROM MEAGRENESS AND WASTE? WHY NOT, IN SHORT, MARRY HER, EXCEPT FOR A HE HEARD LUICI MOVING SOFTLY IN THE ROOM BEHIND, AND PRESENTLY WHEN THE DOOR CLICKED HE ROSE AND WENT IN AND TAKING THE LAMP HELD IT HIGH OVER HIM, TURNING WITH IT FRONTING THE HUGE MIRROR IN ITS GLIDED FRAME. IF THERE WERE A GOOD REASON WHY HE COULDN'T MARRY SAVILLA DASSONWILE, HE OUGHT TO HAVE FOUND IT IN HIS OWN LEAN FRAME, THE FACE MORE DRAWN THAN WAS JUSTIFIED BY HIS YEARS, LINED ABOUT THE EYES, THE HAND THAT HELD THE ACCUSING LAMP BROADENED BY LABOURS THAT NO SCRUPLICSITY OF CARE DENIED. WEATHERAL, OF WEATHERAL, LESSING & CO., UNACCOMPLISHED, UNACCUSTOMED. HE RUT DOWN THE LAMP HEAVILY, leaning forward in his chair as he covered his face with his hands and groaned in them, fully remembering.

reason—oh, there was reason enough if he could only remember it!



HE HAD BEEN SITTING, ILIST SO IN HIS LIBRARY WITH THE LAMP BEHIND HIM AND THE HOLLOW FLARE OF THE COALS MAKING AN EXCELLENT STARTING PLACE FOR THE House which was now so near him that the mere exhibition in shop WINDOWS OF THE STUFFS WITH WHICH IT WAS BEING MODERNLY RENEWED. WAS ENOUGH TO SET HIM OFF FOR IT. IT WAS SO NEAR NOW, THAT SINCE THE ANNOUNCEMENT OF THEIR BYGAGEMENT IN SEPTEMBER. HE HAD MOVED THROUGH ALL ITS OBLIGATIONS BENUMBED BY THE WHITE, BLINDING FLASH THROWN BACKWARD FROM ITS CONSUMMATING MOMENT. THE MOMENT OF HER CRY TO HIM. OF THEIR WELDING AT THE CORE OF LIGHT AND HARWONY. BOUNDED INEVITABLY BY THE APPROACHING DATE OF MARRIAGE. IT HAD BEEN, HE RECALLED ON SOME ONE OF THOSE OCCASIONS OF SOCIAL APPROVAL BY WHICH IT APPEARED BYGAGEMENTS IN THE BEST SOCIETY PROCEEDED. THAT HE HAD SAT THUS. WAITING UNTIL THE CLOCK TICKED ON THE MOMENT WHEN HE MIGHT PROPERLY JOIN HER. SAT SO FULL OF THE SENSE OF HER THAT FOR THE INSTANT HE ACCEPTED HER UNANNOUNCED APPEARANCE AT THE DARKENED HIS WHITE-HEATED FANCY. THE NEXT DOORWAY AS THE MERE EXTENSION OF MOMENT AS SHE CHARGED INTO THE CIRCLE OF THE LAMP HE SAW THAT THE UMBRA OF SOME STRANGE ELECTRICAL EXCITEMENT HUNG ABOUT HER. IT FAIRLY crackled between them as he rose hurriedly to his feet.

BUT HE SAW WELL BROUGH WHAT SHE HAD COME FOR. SHE LAID THE CASE ON THE TABLE, BUT AS SHE TUGGED MATTENTLY AT HER GLOVE, THE FRINGE OF HER WRAP CAUGHT THE CLASP OF IT AND SCATTERED THE JEWELS ON THE CLOTH. SHE tried then to put the ring beside them, but her hand shook so that it fell AND ROLLED UPON THE FLOOR BEHIND THEM. PETER PICKED IT UP QUIETLY, BUT he did not offer it to her hand again.

"You have come. Eunice! You have come-

"I HAVE COME," SAID EUNICE, "TO SAY WHAT IN MY MOTHER'S HOUSE I WAS AFRAID OF BEING INTERRUPTED IN SAYING: WHAT YOU MUST SEE, WHAT MY mother won't see." "I see you are greatly excited about something!"

"I'M NOT, I'M NOT.... THAT IS ... I AM, BUT NOT IN THE WAY YOU THINK," SHE WAS SHARP WITH INSISTENCE: "THAT IS WHAT YOU AND MOTHER ALWAYS SAY. that I'm nervous or excited, and all the time you don't see."

"What is it I don't see. Eunice?" "THAT I CAN'T STAND IT. THAT I CAN'T GO ON WITH IT. THAT IT IS DREADFUL TO ME. -dreadful!"

"What is dreadful?"

"EVERYTHING, BEING BNGAGED—BEING MARRIED AND GIVING UP...." IT WAS FAIRLY RACKED OUT OF HER BY SOME INWARD TORTURE TO WHICH HE HAD NOT THE key.

"OF COURSE. EUNICE IF YOU DON'T WISH TO BE MARRIED SO SOON----PETER WAS ALL AT SEA. HE BROUGHT A CHAIR FOR HER, AND PERCEIVING THAT he would go on standing as long as she did, she sat upon the edge of IT BUT KEPT BOTH THE ARMS AS A MEASURE OF DETENCE. THE SUIGHT ACT OF

DOING SOMETHING FOR HER RESTORED HIM FOR THE MOMENT TO REALITY: HE BENT OVER HER. "I'VE NEVER WANTED TO HURRY YOU, DEAREST- IT SHALL BE WHEN YOU SAY." SHE PUT UP HER HANDS SUDDENLY WITH A SHIVERING

movement. "Oh, never, never at all; never to you!"

PETER COULD FEEL THAT WORKING ITS TRACK OF DESOLATION INWARD. BUT THE FIRST INSTINCTIVE MOVEMENT OF HIS SURFACE WAS TO CLOSE OVER THE WOUND.

HE TOOK IT AS HE KNEW HE COULD ONLY TAKE IT: AS THE EXPLOSIVE ORISIS OF THE VIRGINAL RESISTANCE WHICH HE REVIEWBERED HE HAD HEARD CAME TO

room to steady himself, praying dumbly for the right word.

"IT ISN'T AS IF I DIDN'T RESPECT YOU"—SHE WAS EAGER IN EXPLANATION,
HURRED AND STUMBLING—"AS IF I DIDN'T KNOW HOW GOOD YOU ARE ... IT IS
ONly. because we are so different."

GIRLS WHEN MARRIAGE LOOMED UPON THEM. HE TOOK A TURN DOWN THE

"How different, Eunice?"

"OH ... OLDER, I SUPPOSE" SHE GREW QUETER, IT APPEARED ON THE WHOLE

THEY WERE GETTING ON. "I CARE FOR SO MANY THINGS, YOU KNOW—DANDING —AND BRIDGE— young THINGS—AND YOU ARE ALWAYS READING AND

reading. Oh! I couldn't stand it."

SO IT WAS OUT NOW. SHE WAS JEALOUS OF HIS BOOKS, A LITTLE. WELL, HE HAD
BEEN SELF-ABSORBED. IT OCCURRED TO HIM DIMLY THAT THE THING TO HAVE

them, was to have provoked her at this point to the tears which should HAVE SEALED THE RENEWAL OF HIS CLAIM TO HER. WHAT HE SAID WAS, VERY quietly:

DONE IF HE HAD KNOWN A LITTLE MORE ABOUT WOMEN. HAD PRACTISED WITH

"OF COURSE I NEVER MEANT, EUNICE, THAT YOU SHOULDN'T HAVE EVERYTHING you want."

"OH," SHE SEEMED TO HAVE FOUND A SUFFOCATING QUALITY IN HIS

GENILENESS, AGAINST WHICH SHE STRUCK OUT WITH DROWNING GESTURES, "IF YOU COULD ONLY UNDERSTAND WHAT IT WOULD MEAN TO ME NEVER TO HAVE ANYBODY I LIKED TO TALK TO ABOUT THINGS,—ANYBODY I LIKED TO BE WITH ALL the time!" She was choked and aghast at the enormity of it.

"But I thought...." Peter was not able to go on with that. "Isn't there anybody you like to be with, Eunice?"

"Yes," said Eunice. "Burton Henderson."

MUTINOUS AND BRIGHT SHE LOCKED AT HIM OUT OF THE CHAIR WITH A HAND ON

heard his own voice out of a fog rising to the conventional utterance. "Of course, if you have learned to love him----"

ETHER ARM OF IT POISED FOR FLIGHT OR DEFENCE. AFTER AN INTERVAL PETER

"I'VE LOVED HIM ALL THE TIME." SHE WAS SO BENT ON MAKING THIS CLEAR TO HIM THAT SHE WAS CARELESS WHAT WENT DOWN BEFORE HER. "FROM THE VERY

BEGINNING," SHE SAID, "BUT HE HAD SO LITTLE MONEY, AND MOTHER ... I promised you. I know, but it's not as if I ever said I loved you." SHE SHOULD HAVE SPARED HIM THAT! HE HAD NOT PUT OUT A HAND TO HOLD. HER THAT HE SHOULD BE SO PIERCED THROUGH WITH NEEDLESS CRUELTY. BUT

"Do you think," she expostulated to his stricken silence, "that if I'd CARED IN THE LEAST I'D HAVE MADE IT SO EASY FOR YOU? CAN'T YOU SEE THAT IT WAS ALL ARRANGED, THAT WE jumped AT YOU?" ALL THE TIME SHE SAT

she was bent on clearing her skirts of him.

OPPOSITE HIM. THRUSTING SWIFT AND HARD. THERE WAS NO DIMINUTION OF HER APPEALING BEAUTY, THE FLAMING ROSE OF HER CHEEKS AND THE SOFT, DARK FLARE OF HER HAIR. AS IF SHE FELT HOW IT BELIED AT EVERY TURN THE QUALITY OF

HER UNYIELDING INTENTION. HER VOICE RAILED AGAINST HIM FEVERISHLY. "I SUPPOSE YOU THINK I'M MERCENARY, AND I THOUGHT I WAS, TOO. YOU DON'T KNOW HOW PEOPLE LIKE US need MONEY SOMETIMES. ALL THE THINGS WE

LIKE cost so-all the real things. And poor Mamma, she needed THINGS: SHE'D NEVER HAD THEM, AND I THOUGHT THAT I COULD STAND BEING MARRIED TO YOU IF I COULD GET THEM THAT WAY.... MAYBE I COULD, YOU KNOW.

IF YOU'D BEEN DIFFERENT, MORE LIKE US I MEAN, BUT THERE WAS SUCH A LOT YOU DIDN'T UNDERSTAND ... THINGS YOU HADN'T EVEN HEARD ABOUT. I FOUND

THAT OUT AS SOON AS WE WERE ENGAGED. THERE WASN'T A THING BETWEEN

us; not a thing."

IT POURED SCALDING HOT ON PETER'S SENSITIVE SURFACES: MADE SENSITIVE BY THE WAY IN WHICH EVEN IN THIS HOUR HER BEAUTY MOVED HIM. HE FELT

TEARS STARTING IN HIS HEART AND PRAYED THEY MIGHT NOT COME TO HIS FACE. "SO YOU SEE AS WE HADN'T ANYTHING IN COMMON IT WOULD BE BETTER FOR hadn't been anybody else. You see that, don't you?" She dared him to DENY IT RATHER THAN BEGGED THE CONCESSION OF HIM AS SHE GATHERED herself for departure.
"I see that "

US NOT TO GO ON WITH IT EVEN"-SHE BROKE A LITTLE AT THIS-"EVEN IF THERE

"You never really belonged to our set, you know——" She rose now and he rose bundly with her, he hoped that she was done, but there

Mother isn't coing to make it any easier it's natural for her to want me to have everything that money would mean, and I thought that if you would just keep away from her ... You ome something to Burton and me for what we've been through, I think ... Just leave it to me to

WAS SOMETHING STILL. "IT HASN'T BEEN EASY TO GO THROUGH WITH IT....

manage in my own way...."

"I shall never trouble you, Eunice."

HE CAME CLOSE TO HER THEN TO OPEN THE DOOR, SEEING THAT SHE WAS TO

LEAVE HM, AND HE SAW TOO THAT SHE HAD SUFFERED, WAS AT THE VERY EBB
AND STONY BOTTOM OF BIJOTION AS SHE HUNG FOR THE MOMENT IN THE
DOORWAY SEARCHING FOR SOME WINGED SHAFT OF SEPARATION THAT SHOULD
CLIFTHER OF FROM THE REMOTEST IMPLICATION OF THE STILLATION. SHE FOUND AT

LAST THE BARBEDEST. ALL THE SUCCEDING TIME AFTER HE CLOSED THE DOOR ON HER WAS MARKED FOR PETER, NOT BY THE TICKED MOMENTS BUT BY SUCCESSIVE WAYES OF ANGUISH AS THAT POISONED ARROW WORKED ITS WAY to his secret places.

"I'T ISN'T AS IF I HAD EVER LOVED YOU; I OWE IT TO MR. HENDERSON TO REMIND YOU THAT I NEVER SAID I DID.... YOU KNOW I NEVER LIKED TO HAVE YOU KISS me."

HE HAD IN THE MONTHS THAT SUCCEEDED TO THAT LAST SIGHT OF EUNICE

GOODWARD, MOMENTS OF UNBEARABLY WANTING TO GO TO HER TO TRY FOR A

HIM AND HE HAD SEEN HER DO IT, WHATEVER WOULD HAVE SAVED HIM FROM THE CERTANTY THAT NEVER EVEN IN THOSE FIRST EXQUISITE MOMENTS HAD SHE BEEN HS. THE SHARP EDGE OF HER YOUNG SUFFICIENCY HAD LOPPED OFF THE RIGHT LIMB OF HS MANHOOD. NEVER, EVEN IN HIS DREAMS, IF LIFE HAD ALLOWED HIM TO DREAM AGAIN, SHOULD HE BE ABLE TO SEE HIMSELF IN ANY OTHER GUISE THAN THE MEAGRE, AUSTERSE FRONT WHICH HS OBLIGATION TO HIS MOTHER AND ELLEN HAD OBLIGED HIM TO PRESENT TO DESTINY. SHE HAD BEGGARED HIM OF ALL THOSE APTITUDES FOR PASSIONATE RELATIONS, BY THE FAITH IN WHICH HE HAD KEPT HIMSELF INWARDLY ALIVE. THE CAPACITY FOR loving died in him with the knowledge of not being able to be loved.

OUT OF THE ANXESTHESIA OF EXHAUSTION FROM WHICH ITALY HAD REVIVED HIM, IT ROLLED BACK UPON HIM THAT BY JUST THE WALLED IMPERVIOLINESS.

THAT SHUT ELINGE GOODWARD FROM THE APPRECIATION OF HIS PASSION, HE WAS

prevented now from Savilla Dassonville.

WHEN HE WOULD HAVE TAKEN FROM HER, GRATEFULLY EVEN IF SHE HAD FOOLED

ΧI

IT WAS ODD, THEN, HAVING COME TO THIS CONCLUSION IN THE MIDDLE OF THE NIGHT, THAT WHEN HE JOINED THE LADIES IN THE MORNING HE SHOULD HAVE EXPERIENCED A SINGING PAING IN NOT BEING ABLE ANY LONGER TO BE SUPE WHAT MISS DASSONVILLE THOUGHT OF HIM. THERE WAS IN HER MANNER, AS SHE THANKED HIM FOR THE FLOWERS, NOTHING TO RUFFLE THE SURFACE OF THE BRIGHT, IMPERSONAL COMPANIONSHIP WHICH SHE HAD AFFORDED HIM FOR WEEKS PAST.

Weeks past.

THE OCCASION WHICH BROUGHT THEM TOGETHER WAS AN AGREEMENT ENTERED INTO SOME DAYS EARLIER, TO GO AND LOOK AT PALACES, AND AS THEY TURNED PAST THE SALUTI TO THE GRAND CANAL, HE FOUND HIMSELF WONDERING IF THERE HAD NOT BEEN A TOUCH OF FATUITY IN HIS READING OF THE INCODENT OF THE MORNING BEFORE. HE HAD GONE SO FAR IN THE NIGHT AS TO THINK EVEN OF LEAVING VENCE, AND SAW HIMSELF NOW FORLORNLY WISHING FOR SOME RENEWAL OF YESTERDAY'S MOOD TO EXCUSE HIM FROM THE CADIDISHNESS that such a flight implied.

IT CAME OUT A LITTLE LATTER, PERHAPS, WHEN AFTER TRAVERSING MANY HIGH AND RESOUNDING MARBLE HALLS, WITH A GREAT MANY ROOMS OPENING INTO ONE ANOTHER IN A WAY THAT SUGGESTED RATHER THE AVOIDANCE OF PRIVACY THAN ITS SECURITY, THEY FOUND THEMSELVES IN ONE OF THOSE GARDENS OF SHUT DELIGHT OF WHICH THE EXTERIORS OF VENETIAN HOUSES GIVE SO LITTLE INTIMATION

AS SHE WENT ABOUT FROM BOUCH TO BOUCH OF THE NEGLECTED ROSES,
TURNED ALL INWARD AS IF THEY TOOK THER FLORESCENCE FROM THAT STILL LIGHTED
HUMAN PASSION WHICH HAD FOUND ITS RELEASE AND CENTRE THERE, HER
FACE GLOWED FOR THE MOMENT WITH THE COLLOUR OF HER QUICK SYMPATHES.
SHE TURNED IT ON HIM WITH AN LINCONSCIOUS, TENDERS CONFIDENCE, WHICH

NOT TO MEET SEEMED TO PETER, IN THAT GENTLE ENCLOSURE FULL OF WARMTH and fragrance, to assume the proportions of a betrayal. HE DID MEET IT THERE AS SHE CAME BACK TO HIM FOR THE LAST LOOK FROM THE MARBLE BALLISTRADE BY WHICH THEY HAD DESCENDED. COVERING HER HAND. THERE RESTING. LINGERINGLY WITH HIS OWN, HE WAS AWAKENED ONLY TO THE IMPLICATION OF THIS MOVEMENT BY THE DISCOVERY THAT SHE HAD deeply and exquisitely blushed. IT WAS A FURTHER SINGULARITY IN VIEW OF THE CONVICTION WITH WHICH PETER HAD COME THROUGH THE NIGHT. THAT THE MOOD OF PROTECTINGNESS WHICH THE GIRL PROVOKED IN HIM SHOULD HAVE MULTIPLIED ITSELE IN POINTING OUT TO HIM HOW MANY WAYS, IF HE HAD NOT MADE UP HIS MIND NOT TO MARRY HER AT ALL, SUCH A MARRIAGE COULD BE MADE TO SERVE ITS PRIMAL USES. SHE HAD TURNED UP HER CLIFF TO TRAIL HER HAND OVERSIDE AS THEY SLID THROUGH THE LUCENT WATER. AND THE PRETTY FEMININE CURVE OF IT HAD BROUGHT TO MND WHAT THE PRINCESS HAD TOLD HIM OF THE SHIRT-WAISTS SHE MADE HERSELF. HE DECODED THAT SHE MADE THEM VERY WELL. BUT SHE WAS TOO THIN FOR THEIR SEVERITY—AND IF HE MARRIED HER HE WOULD HAVE INSISTED ON HER WEARING THEM NOW AND THEN AS A TENDER WAY TO PREVENT HER SUSPECTING THAT IT WAS ON THEIR ACCOUNT HE HAD THOUGHT OF NOT MARRYING HER. THE REVEALED WHITENESS OF HER WRIST, THE INTIMACY OF HER RELAXED. posture, for though her mind had PLAYED INTO HIS AS FREELY AS A CHILD IN A MEADOW, SHE HAD BEEN ALWAYS, AS REGARDS HER PERSON, A LITTLE PRIM WITH HIM. HAD LENT TO THEIR ERRAND OF HOUSE VISITING A PERSONAL NOTE IN WHICH IT WAS ABSURDLY APT FOR THEM TO HAVE RUN ACROSS CAPTAIN DUNHAM OF THE Merrythought AT THE DOOR OF THE CONSULATE. MR. Weatheral HAD SOME PAPERS WHICH LESSING HAD SENT HIM TO ACKNOWLEDGE THERE. AND IT WAS A PIECE OF THE MORNING'S PERFORMANCE. WHEN HE HAD COME BACK FROM THAT BUSINESS. TO FIND THAT THE MEETING HAD TAKEN ON-FROM SOME MUTUAL DISCOVERY OF THE CAPTAIN'S AND MRS. MERRITHEWS OF A COUSIN'S WIFE'S SISTER WHO HAD MARRIED ONE OF THE APPLEGATES WHO WAS A DUNHAM ON THE MOTHER'S SIDE—QUITE THE ASPECT OF A FAMILY PARTY. IT CAME IN THE BND TO THE FOUR OF THEM GOING

HIMSELF IN A POSITION WHICH TO HIS OWN SENSITIVENESS, DEMANDED THAT HE MUST IMMEDIATELY LEAVE VENICE OR PROPOSE TO MISS DASSONVILLE. To see the way he was going and to go on in it. Had for him the FASCINATION OF THE ARYSS. HE CAUGHT HIMSE F IN THE ACT EVEN OF TRYING TO FIX MISS DASSONVILLE'S EYE TO INCLUDE HER BY COMPLICITY IN THE BEGULEWENT OF THE CAPTAIN. A BUSINESS WHICH SHE SEEMED TO HAVE UNDERTAKEN ON HER OWN ACCOUNT ON QUITE OTHER GROUNDS. HE PERCEIVED WITH A KIND OF PRIDE FOR HER THAT SHE HAD THE WAYS OF BLDERLY SEA-GOING GENTLEMEN BY HEART. IT WAS SOMETHING EVEN IF SHE HAD FAILED TO CHARM Peter, that she shouldn't be found guite wanting in it by other men.

Merrythought THEY HAD

OFF AT PETER'S INVITATION TO HAVE LUNCH TOGETHER IN A CAFÉ OVERHANGING THE calle. HE TOLD HIMSELF AFTERWARD THAT HE WOULD NOT HAVE DONE IT IF HE HAD RECALLED IN TIME THE FRIENDLY SEAMAN'S ROMANTIC APPRECIATION OF THE SITUATION BETWEEN HIMSELF AND MISS DASSONVILLE. HE SAW HIMSELF SO INTRIGUED BY IT THAT, BY THE TIME LUNCH WAS OVER, HE FELT

situation "When are you coming to lunch with me?" demanded the captain.

COME TO SUCH A PITCH AMONG THEM ALL, THAT AS THE CAPTAIN LEANED ABOVE THE RAIL TO LAUNCH AN INVITATION, HE ADDRESSED IT TO MISS DASSONVILLE, AS, IF NOT QUITE THE GIVER OF THE FEAST, THE MISTRESS OF THE

When they had put him back aboard of the

"Never!" peglared Miss Dassonville. "It would be guite out of the QUESTION TO HAVE HOT. CAKES FOR LUNCHEON, AND ABSOLUTELY REFUSE TO

"THERE'S SOMETHING QUITE AS GOOD." ASSERTED THE CAPTAIN. "THAT I'LL BET you haven't had in as long."

"Better than hot cakes?" Miss Dassonville was skeptical.

"Pie," said the captain.

come for anything less."

"Oh, Pie!" IN MOOK ECSTASY. "WELL, I'D COME FOR PIE," AND WITH THAT THEY parted.

PETER HAD PLENTY OF TIME FOR CONSIDERING WHERE HE FOUND HIMSELF THAT AFTERNOON, FOR THE LADIES WERE BENT ON A SHOPPING EXPEDITION ON WHICH THEY HAD RATHER POINTEDLY GIVEN HIM TO UNDERSTAND HE WAS NOT EXPECTED TO ATTEND. HE HAD TRED THAT ONCE, AND HAD HIT UPON THE EXCELLENT DEVICE, IN FACE OF THE OUTRAGEOUS PRICES PROPOSED BY THE DEALERS, OF HAVING THEM SETTLE UPON WHAT THEY WOULD LIKE AND SENDING LUGI BACK TO BARCAIN FOR IT. ALL OF WHICH WOULD HAVE GONE VERY WELL IF MRS. MERRITHEW, IN THE DELIGHT OF HIS ANAZING SUCCESS, HAD NOT GONE BACK TO THE SHOP THE NEXT DAY TO DUFLICATE HIS PURCHASES. PETER HAD NEVER HEARD WHAT COCURRED ON THAT COCASION, BUT HE HAD NOTICED THAT THEY NEVER TALKED IN HIS PRESENCE OF BUYING ANYTHING AGAIN.
BLOOMBURY PEORLE, HE SHOULD HAVE REVEMBREED, HAD HAD PERFECTLY

HE WALKED, THEREFORE, ON THIS AFTERNOON IN THE PUBLIC GARDENS AND TRIED TO RECONSTRUCT IN THEIR ORIGINAL FORCE THE REASONS FOR HIS NOT MARRYING SAVILLA DASSONVILLE. THEY HAD COME UPON HIM overwhelmingly in the recrudescence of memory, reasons rooted very simply in his man's hunger for the lift, the dizzying eminence of desire. HE LIKED THE GIRL WELL BNOUGH BUT HE DID NOT WANT HER AS HE HAD WANTED EVANCE GOODWARD, AS HE WANTED EVANSWLY AT THIS MOMENT

definite notions about having things done for them.

PERFECTLY CLEAR ON THIS POINT—BUT SHOULD BE IN A MEASURE ALL SHE
STOOD FOR TO HIM. HE HAD RENEWED IN THE NIGHT, THOUGH IN SO SHORT A
TIME, NOT LESS ACUTELY, ALL THE WOUNDED MISERY OF WHAT EUNICE HAD
FORCED UPON HIM. HE WAS THERE BETWEEN THE DARK AND DAWN, AND HERE
AGAIN IN THE COOL OF THE GARDEN. TO TASTE THE BULL BITTERNESS OF THE

TO WANT SOMETHING, SOMEBODY—WHO WAS NOT EUNICE—HE WAS

CONVICTION that he was not good enough to be loved. He was not to be helped FROM THAT BY THE THOUGHT, WHICH CAME HURRYING ON THE HELLS OF

THE OTHER, THAT SAVILLA DASSOM/LLE LOVED HIM. HE HAD A MOMENT OF ALMOST HATING HER AS SHE SEEMED TO PLEAD WITH HIM. BY NO MOTION OF

HER OWN HE WAS OBLIGED TO CONFESS FOR THOSE RAPTURES. LEAPING FIRES. winged rushes, which should have been his portion of their situation. HE HATED HER FOR THE CERTAINTY THAT IF HE WENT AWAY NOW QUIETLY WITHOUT SAYING ANYTHING. IT WOULD BE TO VISIT ON HER UNDESERVEDLY ALL THAT HAD COME TO HIM FROM EUNICE. FOR SHE WOULD KNOW: SHE WOULD NOT, AS HE HAD BEEN, BE BLIND TO THE POINT OF REQUIRING THE SPOKEN WORD. IF HE LEFT HER NOW IT WOULD BE TO THE UNAVOIDABLE KNOWLEDGE THAT, AS THE PRINCESS HAD SAID OF HIM. HE WOULD BE RUNNING AWAY. HE WOULD BE RUNNING FROM THE EVIDENCES OF A MONEYLESS. SELF-ABNEGATING YOUTH. FROM THE PLAIN SURFACES OF EFFICIENCY AND WOMANLINESS. NOT HEDGED ABOUT AND ENFOLDED, BUT PUSHED TO THE EXTREMITY OF ITS USE. HE HAD. HOWEVER, WHEN HE HAD TAKEN THAT IN FROM EVERY SIDE, THE GRACE TO BE ashamed of it. HE WAS ASHAMED. TOO, OF FINDING HIMSELF AT THEIR NEXT MEETING INVOLVED IN A WORDLESS APPEAL TO BE HELPED FROM HIS STATE TO SOME LARGER GROUNDS. IF THE GIRL HAD BUT APPEALED TO HIM HE COULD HAVE DONE WITH A FINE CENEROSITY WHAT HE FELT WAS BEYOND HIM TO INVITE. HE COULD HAVE MARRIED SAVILLA DASSONVILLE TO BE KIND TO HER: WHAT HE DIDN'T

enjoy was putting it on a basis of her being kind to him. Miss Dassonville, however, afforded him no help beyond the negative ONE OF NOT TALKING TOO MUCH AND TAKING PERHAPS A SHADE LESS INTEREST.

IN VENICE. THEY HAD TWO QUET DAYS TOGETHER IN WHICH IT WAS EVIDENT, WHATEVER PETER SETTLED WITH HIMSELF AS TO HIS RELATION TO THE GIRL. IT HAD TAKEN ON FOR MRS. MERRITHEW THE POINTEDNESS KNOWN IN BLOOMBURY AS "ATTENTIONS." SHE PAID IN TO THE POSSIBILITIES OF THE SITUATION THE TRIBUTE

OF HER ABSENCE FOR LONG SESSIONS IN WHICH, SO FAR AS PETER COULD DISCOVER. THE SITUATION RATHER FELL TO THE GROUND. IT BEGAN TO APPEAR THAT HE HAD MISSED AS HE WAS DOOMED WITH WOMEN. THE CRUCIAL INSTANT.

AND WAS TO COME OUT OF THIS AS OF OTHER ENCOUNTERS. EMPTY. AND THEN quite suddenly the girl put out a hand to him.

CHURCH OF SAINT GEORGE THE GREATER, WHICH AS BEING MOST ACCESSIBLE HAD BEEN LEET TO THE LATTER END OF THEIR EXPLORATIONS. MRS. MERRITHEW HAD JUST SENT GIUSEPPE BACK FOR A SHAWL WHICH SHE HAD DROPPED IN THE CLOISTER. THEY SAT ROCKING IN THE GONDOLA LOCKING TOWARD THE FAIRY ARCADE OF THE DUCAL PALACE AND THE PILLARS OF THE SAINTS. AND SUDDENLY Miss Dassonville spoke to excuse her guietness. "I MUST LOOK ALL I CAN." SHE SAID: "WE ARE LEAVING THE DAY AFTER TOmorrow" IF SHE HAD RETIRED BEHIND MRS. MERRITHEWS COMFORTABLE BREADTH IN ORDER TO DELIVER HER SHOT THE MORE EFFECTIVELY. SHE MISSED SEEING HOW PLUMPLY IT LANDED IN THE MIDST OF PETER'S DEFENCES AND SCATTERED. them. "LEAVING VENICE?" HE SAID. "LEAVING ME?" IT TOOK A MOMENT FOR THAT FACT, DROPPING THE DEPTH OF HIS INDECISION, TO SHOW HIM WHERE HE STOOD. "BUT I THOUGHT YOU UNDERSTOOD," HE PROTESTED, "THAT I WANTED YOU TO STAY ... TO STAY WITH ME ... " HE LEANED ACROSS MRS. MERRITHEWS. BROAD LAP IN A GREAT FEAR OF NOT BEING SUFFICIENTLY PLAIN "MAKE HER

IT WAS ALONG ABOUT THE END OF THE AFTERNOON THEY HAD COME OUT OF THE

understand," he said, "that I want her to stay always."

"I GUESS," SAID MRS. MERRITHEW, A DRY SMLE TWINKLING IN THE FLACIDITY OF HER COUNTENANCE, "YOU'D BETTER TAKE ME RIGHT HOME FIRST, AND THEN YOU can explain to her yourself."

XII

"AND YOU ARE SURE," ASKED PETER, "THAT YOU ARE NOT GOING TO MIND MY being so much older?"

"OH, I'M GOING TO MIND IT: THERE WILL BE TIMES WHEN I SHALL BE AFRAID OF NOT LIVING UP TO IT. BUT THE MOST FART OF MY MINDING WILL BE, SINCE YOU ARE SO MUCH BEITER ACQUAINTED WITH LIFE THAN I AM, THAT IN ANY MATTER IN WHICH WE SHOULDN'T AGREE I SHALL BE SO MUCH THE MORE SURE OF YOUR BEING RIGHT. It'S GOING TO BE A GREAT HELP TO US, HAVING SOMETHING LIKE that to go by."

"Oh," said Peter, "you put it very prettily, my dear."

HE WAS AWARE AS SOON AS HE HAD SAID IT, THAT SHE WOULD HAVE A WAY ALWAYS OF PUTTING THINGS PRETTILY, AND THAT NOT FOR THE SAKE OF ANY PRETTINESS, BUT BECAUSE IT WAS SO INTRINSICALLY SHE SAW THEM. IT WOULD MAKE EVERYTHING MUCH SIMPLER THAT SHE WAS ALWAYS SUFFICIENTLY TO BE believed.

"IT ISN'T, YOU KNOW," SHE WENT ON, "AS IF I SHOULD HAVE CONTINUALLY TO PROP UP MY CONFIDENCE WITH MY AFFECTION AS I MIGHT WITH A MAN OF LESS EXPERIENCE. OH!" SHE THREW OUT HER ARMS WITH A BEAUTIFUL UPWARD motion, "you give me so much room, Peter."

gondola on a public highway!"

HE AMAZED HIMSELF AT THE FELICITY WITH WHICH DURING THE THREE DAYS OF THEIR BNGAGEMENT HE HAD BEEN ABLE TO TAKE THAT NOTE WITH HER, STILL MORE AT THE ENTERTAINMENT OF HER SHY RESPONSE. IT GAVE HIM A NEW AND BNLARGED PERCEPTION OF HIMSELF AS A MAN ACQUIAINTED WITH PASSION, ALL THAT HAD BEEN WITH-ELD FROM HIM, BY THE MERE EXPERIENCE OF MISSING,

"Well, more than I would give you at this movent if we were not in a

WITH A CERTAIN PRESSURE, HE COULD FEEL ALL HER BEING FLOWER DELICATELY TO THAT BEQUILEMENT. HE HAD PROMISED HIMSELF, WHEN HE HAD HER PROMISE, THAT SHE SHOULD NEVER MISS ANYTHING, AND HE HAD A CERTAIN MALE SATISFACTION IN BEING ABLE TO MAKE GOOD. WHAT HE DID NOW, IN DEPENDED TO THEIR BEING AS THEY WERE IN THE FULL LIGHT OF DAY AND THE plying traffic, was to say:

"THEN IF I WERE TO PUT IT TO YOU IN THE LIGHT OF MY SUPERIOR EXPERIENCE, THAT I CONSIDERED IT BEST FOR US TO BE MARRIED RIGHT AWAY, I SHOULDN'T expect you to contradict me."

"Oh, Peter!"

"WE CAN'T KEEP MIRS. MERRITHEW ON FOREVER, YOU KNOW," HE SUGGESTED, "AND WE'VE SUCH A LOT TO DO—THERE'S GREECE AND EGYPT AND THE HOLY LAID.—"

HE WAS ABLE TO BESTOW WITH LARGESSE. THE WITCHERY AND CHARM THAT HAD BEEN DONE ON HIM, HE WORKED—IF HE WERE BUT TO PUT HIS ARM ABOUT HER NOW, TO DRAW HER. SO THAT HER HEAD RESTED ON HIS SHOULDER.

"That," said Peter, "is what I'm waiting your permission to find out."

HE SPENT THE GREATER PART OF THE AFTERNOON AT THAT BUSINESS WITHOUT,
HOWEVER, GETTING SATISFACTION. "MARRIAGE IN ITALY," THE CONSUL TOLD HIM,
"IS A SORT OF WORLD-WITHOUT-BND AFFAIR. EVEN IF YOU CABLE FOR THE

"But can we—be married in Venice, I mean?"

NECESSARY PAPERS IT WILL BE A MATTER OF A MONTH OR SIX WEEKS BEFORE
THE CEREMONY COULD BE ACCOMPLISHED. YOU'LL DO BETTER TO GO TO
Switzerland with the young lady."

FOR THE PRESENT HE WENT BACK TO HER WITH A LIST OF THE REQUIRED

FOR THE PRESENT HE WENT BACK TO HER WITH A LIST OF THE REQUIRED CERTIFICATES, AND ANOTHER ITEM WHICH HE BROUGHT OUT LATER AS A corrective for the disappointment for the first.

"MY BIRTH AND BAPTISWAL CERTIFICATES? I HAVEN'T ANY," SAID MISS

"No." said Peter, "even that takes three weeks." "Why can't he marry us himself—the consul. I mean? I thought wherever the flag went up was territory of the United States." "IF YOU WILL COME ALONG WITH ME IN THE MORNING WE CAN ASK HIM." PETER SUGGESTED. AND ON THE WAY THERE HE LOOSED FOR HER BENEFIT THE SECOND. ITEM OF HIS YESTERDAY'S DISCOVERY. THEY SLID PAST THE FAÇADE OF A certain palace and she kissed the tip of her finger to it lightly. "It's as if WE HAD A SECRET BETWEEN US." SHE EXPLAINED. "THE SECRET OF THE GARDEN. BESIDES. I SHALL ALWAYS LOVE IT BECAUSE IT WAS THERE I FIRST suspected that you—cared. When did you begin to care. Peter?" "Since before I can remember. Would you like to live in it?" "In this palace? Here in Venice?" "It's for rent." he told her: "the consul has it." "But could we afford it?"

DASSONVILLE, "AND I DON'T BELIEVE YOU HAVE ETHER; AND I DON'T WANT TO

go to Switzerland."

ON THE VILLAGERS OF THAT, AND SO FAILED TO TAKE NOTE AS THEIR GONDOLA NOSED INTO THE GREEN SHADOW UNDER THE CONSULATE, OF THE *Memythought's* LAUNCH ATHWART THE LANDING, UNTIL THE CAPTAIN HIMSELF hailed them.

"WELL," SAID PETER, "IF YOU LIKE IT SO MUCH, AT THE RATE THINGS ARE HERE, we can pull it up by the roots and take it back to Bloombury."

THEY LOST THEMSELVES IN ARSE RO SPECIL ATIONS AS TO THE PROBABLE PETERCT.

SINCE HALF TIDE AND THERE'S NOTHING DOING. SOMEBODY'S IN THERE
CHEWING RED TAPE, BUT I DON'T CALCULATE TO LET ANYBODY BLSE HAVE A TURN
AT IT UNTIL I GET MY BIT WOUND UP AN'THEN IN A KNOT, NOW DON'T TELL ME

"THIS PORT," HE DECLARED, "IS UNDER EMBARGO. I HAVE BEEN WAITING HERE

"Well, when ye find it, it won't be what ye want," asserted the captain Gloomly. "I't never is in these Dago countries." He motioned his own BOAT ASIDE FROM THE LANDING. "IF YE WANT TO GO INSIDE AND SET ON A

you've got business in there?"
"We want to find out something."

"Could you marry people?"

CHAR," HE SUGGESTED, "I'LL NOT HENDER YE I LIKE THE WATER BEST MYSELF. I hope your business will stand waiting."

"TO EVERYBODY BUT OURSELVES," SAID PETER. "YOU SEE," HE CAUGHT THE PERWISSION LIGHTLY FROM MISS DASSONVILLE'S EYES. "WE WANT TO GET

married."

"Ho!" SAID THE CAPTAIN. CHRKING UP. "I COULD 'A' TOLD YE THAT THE FUST.

TIME I LAD EYES ON YE. BUT I'LL TELL YE THS: YE CAN'T DO NOTHING IN A HURRY IN THS COUNTRY. THE ONLY PLACE WHERE A MAN CAN DO THINGS UP AS SOON AS HE THINKS OF 'EM IS ON THE BLUE WATER. WE DON'T HAVE RED TAPE ON shipboard, I can tell you. The skipper's the law and the government."

"Well, I ain't to say in the habit of it, but it's the law that I could."

"THEN IF WE GET TANGLED UP WITH THE CONSUL," SAID PETER, "WE'LL HAVE TO FALL BACK ON YOU," AND THEY TOOK IT AS AN EXCELLENT PECC OF FOOLING Which they were later to come back to as a matter of serious resort.

"OF COURSE," SAID THE CONSUL., "I COULD MARRY YOU AND IT WOULD BE LEGAL
IF YOU CHOSE TO COUNT IT SO AT HOME, BUT IF YOU ARE THINKING OF TAKING A
HOUSE HERE AND OF MAKING AN EXTENDED RESIDENCE I SHOULDN'T ADVISE
IT. AS TO CAPTIAIN D'UN-HAM'S SUGGESTION, IT'S NOT WHOLLY A BAD ONE. NOT
BEING IN ÎTALY, THE ÎTALIANS CAN'T TAKE EXCEPTION TO IT, AND IF IT IS PROPERLY

witnessed and recorded at home it ought to stand."

They couldn't of course take it in all at once that they were simply to

SAIL OUT THERE INTO THE ETHEREAL BLUENESS AND TO COME BACK FROM IT WITH THE RIGHT TO LIVE TOGETHER. HOWEVER, IT MADE FOR A GREAT UNANIMITY OF OPINION AS THEY TALKED IT OVER ON THE WAY HOME. THAT, SINCE SO MUCH WAS LACKING FROM PETER'S MARRIAGE THAT HE HAD DREAMED WENT TO IT. AND SO MUCH MORE HAD COME INTO SAVILLA'S THAN SHE HAD DARFD TO imagine, it mattered very little what else was added or left out. "I SUPPOSE," SUGGESTED MISS DASSONVILLE, "MRS. MERRITHEW WILL THINK IT dreadful." But as it turned out Mrs. Merrithew thought very well of it. "ON A UNITED STATES BOAT WITH A UNITED STATES MINISTER—THERE IS ONE HERE I'VE FOUND OUT---IT SEEMS A LOT SAFER THAN TO TRUST TO THESE FOREIGN WAYS. IF YOU WAS TO BE MARRIED IN ITALIAN I SHOULD NEVER BE CERTAIN YOU WOULDN'T WAKE UP SOME MORNING AND FIND YOURSELF NOT MARRIED. AND THEN HOW SHOULD I FEEL!" AS TO THE PALACE PLAN, SHE THREW HERSELF INTO IT WITH HEAVY ALACRITY. "I S'POSE I'VE GOT TO SEE YOU THROUGH." SHE SAID. "AND IT WILL GIVE ME SOMETHING TO THINK ABOUT, I DON'T SUPPOSE YOU HAVE ANY INTENTION THAT WAY, BUT AN ENGAGED COUPLE ISN'T VERY GOOD company."

IT TRANSPIRED THAT THE Merrythought Would put out to the high seas on THE TWENTY-SECOND. AND IT WAS IN THE FLUTTER OF THEIR PRACTICAL ADJUSTMENTS TO MEET THIS DATE THAT PETER FOUND THE TEN DAYS OF HIS ENGAGEMENT MOVE SO SWIFTLY: TO ENGAGE SERVANTS. TO INTERVIEW

TRADESPEOPLE. TO PRUNE THE NEGLECTED GARDEN—IT WAS SAVILLA'S NOTION THAT THEY SHOULD DO THIS THEMSELVES—ALL. THE STIR OF DOMESTIC LIFE MADE

SO MANY POINTS OF ADVANTAGE TO SUPPORT HIM ABOVE THAT DRYNESS OF DESPAIR FROM WHICH HE HAD MOMENTS OF FEELING HIMSELF ALL TOO HARDLY

RESCUED. HE HAD COME UP OUT OF IT SUFFICIENTLY BY THE HELP THAT ITALY afforded, to alimpse once more the country of his dreams, only by this

ACT OF HIS MARRIAGE TO TURN HIS BACK ON IT FOREVER. SAVILLA DASSONVILLE

WAS A DEAR LITTLE THING; IF IT CAME TO THAT, A REVERED AND VALUED THING,

BUT SHE WAS NOT. HE HAD NEVER PRETBYDED IT. THE LOVELY LADY, AND THE DOOR THAT SHUT THEM IN AS MAN AND WIFE WAS TO SHUT her FOREVER OUT OF WAS REMARKABLE EVEN TO HIMSELF HOW MUCH LESS FREQUENTLY AS THE PREPARATIONS FOR HIS MARRIAGE WENT FORWARD. HE FOUND HIMSELF OBLIGED TO FALL BACK UPON IT: HOW MUCH MORE HE PROJECTED HIMSELF INTO HIS FUTURE AS THE ADORED AND PROTECTING MALE. HE RECALLED IN THIS CONNECTION THAT THE PRINCESS HAD SAID TO HIM THAT HE SHOULD VISIT HIS HOUSE NO MORE, AND IT WAS PART OF THE PROOF OF THE NOTION HE ENTERTAINED TOWARD HIMSELF AS A MAN DONE WITH THE IMAGINATIVE LIFE. THAT HE ACCEPTED IT WITH NO MORE FUSS ABOUT IT. HE HAD IN FACT HIS MIND'S EYE ON A PIECE OF GROUND WHICH LESSING COULD BUY FOR HIM. ON THE RIVER, AN HOUR FROM THE CITY, WHERE HE COULD MANAGE FOR SAVILLA AT LEAST, A GENEROUS SUBSTITUTE FOR DREAMS, AND A SITUATION FOR HIMSELF FOR WHICH HE BEGAN TO DISCOVER MORE APPETITE THAN HE WOULD HAVE BELIEVED. IT WAS LIKELY, HE THOUGHT, THAT HE WOULD HIMSELF TAKE A TURN AT planning the garden.

HIS LIFE. AND YET THOUGH THIS WAS HIS ACCEPTED, HIS OFFICIAL POSITION, IT

IT WAS VERY EARLY IN THE MORNING WHEN THE WEDDING PARTY WHICH HAD BEEN REINFORCED BY THE CONSUL, THE MISTRESS OF CASA FROLLI, AND THE MINISTER, WHO HAD TURNED OUT TO BE EXACTLY OF MRS. MERRITHEW'S PERSUASION, WENT ABOARD THE Merrythought, BLOOMING OUT AMAZINGLY IN BUNTING AND ROSES FOR THE OCCASION. THE MORNING BLUENESS HAD DRAINED OUT FROM THE CITY AND STAINED THE WATERS EASTWARD AS THEY PUT OUT BETWEEN THE RED AND YELLOW SAILS OF THE FISHING FLEET. THEY SAW THE CYPRESS-TOWERED ISLANDS OF ROWANCE MELT IN THE MORNING HAZE. THE STEAM LAUNCH WHICH WAS TO TAKE THEM ASHORE AGAIN PLOUGHED ALONGSIDE, AND THERE WAS A PLEASANT SORT OF HOME SMELL FROM THE cook's quarters. PETER SAT FORWARD WITH THE BRIDE'S HAND TUCKED UNDER HIS ARM AND

"What do you think it is?"

presently he heard her laughing softly, delightedly. "Peter, do you know what that is, that good smell I mean?" "It'S PIE BAKING. TRULY, DON'T YOU THINK I'M BNOUGH OF A HOUSEMIFE TO know that?" "I know you're everything you ought to be." "It is pie. There's no doubt about it, but we must pretend to be awfully surprised when the captain brings it out. But Peter, don't you like it?"

"No. but like having everything so howey and—and—so genune at our weddina?"

"I HOPE." SAID PETER. "IT'S GENUNE PIE. BUT I SEE WHAT YOU MEAN. MY

"Pie, my dear?"

dear." "It's an oven, almost, that we'll always have the good, comfortable." COMMON THINGS TO FALL BACK UPON. IF OUR MARRIAGE SHOULD NOT PROVE

OUTE ALL WE'VE DREAMED IT. IT'S BEEN SO PERFECT UP TO NOW: IT MUST DROP down out of the clouds some time." IT SEEMED RATHER TO HAVE TAKEN A SWEEP UPWARD WHEN, WITH SAILS

SWELLING OVER THEM AND THE BEAT OF THE SEA UNDER THE BOWS. THEY STOOD UP TO BE MARRIED. AND TO EXHIBIT CAPACITIES OF SUSTAINING ITSELF AT A LEVEL FROM WHICH NOT THE VERY SOGGY AND SALLOW COMPLEXIONED PIE WITH THE COOK GRINNING BEHIND IT. COULD DISLODGE THE TWO MOST

CONCERNED IN IT. IT WORE THROUGH THE DAY TO A CONTAINED AND QUIET GAYETY AT A DINNER WHICH TOOK PLACE IN THE ristoranta OVER THE WATER

WHERE THEY HAD ONCE LUNCHED WITH THE CAPTAIN, AND LASTED UNTIL PETER HAD BROUGHT HIS WIFE HOME AGAIN TO THE REFURNISHED PALACE. IT HAD GONE, AS HE TOLD HIMSELF, REWARKABLY WELL, WITH EVERY INTIMATION, AS HE HAD TIME TO TELL HIMSELF IN HIS LAST HOURS IN THE GARDEN WITH HIS CIGAR. OF

GOING MUCH BETTER, OF BECOMING AS THE PLACE GAVE HIM OCCASION TO INDULGE THE FIGURE, AN ENCLOSED AND FRAGRANT GARDEN, IN WHICH IF NO FLAMING ANGEL OF DESIRE KEPT THE GATE FOR HIM, HE HAD AT LEAST THE

THAT OLD PASSION FOR EUNICE GOODWARD, ALL HIS FEELINGS FOR ALL THE WOMEN HE HAD KNOWN. SERVED TO SHOW HIM WHAT SAVILLA HAD MEANT. WHEN SHE SAID HE "GAVE HER SO MUCH ROOM"—THE RENEWED SENSE OF the spaciousness of life. IT WOULD BE THERE FOR HIS WIFE AT THE COMPLETEST, AND IF SHE HAD, AS IT

promise of refreshment.

SEEMED. TURNED HIM OUT OF THE WONDERFUL HOUSE IN ORDER TO LIVE IN IT HERSELF. HE AT LEAST KEPT THE GATES. AND WAS NOT THIS THE PROPER BUSINESS FOR A MAN? HE RECALLED WHAT THE PRINCESS HAD SAID TO HIM SO LONG AGO WHEN HE HAD FIRST BEGLIN TO THINK OF HIMSELE AS A BACHELOR. "IT TAKES A LOT OF DREAMING TO BRING ONE LIKE ME TO PASS." WELL, HE HAD DREAMED AND HE HAD SLAIN SOME DRAGONS. LATER THERE WOULD BE

CHILDREN PLAYING IN THE HOUSE, DAUGHTERS PERHAPS ... LOVELY LADIES. THE WORLD WOULD BE A BETTER PLACE FOR THEM TO WALK ABOUT IN BECAUSE of all that he had lost and been. WHEN HE WENT INTO THE GARDEN HE HAD HALF EXPECTED THAT THE PRINCESS WOULD SPEAK TO HIM: THE PLACE WAS FULL OF HINTS OF HER. FAINT AND PERSUASIVE AS THE SCENT OF THE FLOWERS IN THE DARK. LITTLE RIFFLES OF HIS PULSE, FLUSHED SURFACES, THE TINGLING OF HIS PALMS WHICH ANNOUNCED HER. BUT SHE DID NOT SPEAK. HE SAID TO HIMSBLE THAT HE WAS NOW A WILL MAN AND HAD SEEN THE LAST OF HER. NEVER BEFORE HAD HE FELT SO VERY

ALONG THE MARBLE FLOOR OF THE GREAT HALL WHICH WINT QUITE THROUGH THE

well.

MIDDLE OF IT-SHE MUST BE GOING TO HER ROOM, AND IN A LITTLE WHILE HE WOULD GO IN TO HER-HE HEARD THE LIGHT TAPPING OF HER FEET AND THEN HE

HE SAW THE LIGHT MOVING IN THE PALACE BEHIND HIM AS HIS WIFE MOVED. TO COMPLETE SOME OF HER ARRANGEMENTS: HE HEARD HER THEN PACING

saw her come, the lit lamp in her hand. SHE HAD ON STILL THE WHITE DRESS IN WHICH SHE HAD BEEN MARRIED. AND

OVER IT SHE HAD THROWN THE SILVER-WOVEN SCARE WHICH HAD BEEN ONE OF

HIS FIRST GIFTS TO HER, AND AS SHE CAME THE LIGHT GLITTERED ON IT; IT DREW FROM THE POLISHED WALLS BRIGHT REFLECTIONS IN WHICH, AMD THE GLIDED FRAMES, HE SAW THE DIM OLD PICTURES START AND WAVER—AND AS HE SAW HER COMING SO, PETER THREW AWAY HIS CIGAR AND GRIPPED SUDDENLY AT THE BALLISTRADE TO STEADY HIM WHERE HE STOOD, AGAINST WHAT OUT OF SOME FAR SPRING OF HIS YOUTH RUSHED LIPON HIM, AS HE SAW HER COME—AS HE HAD ALWAYS SEEN HER, AS HE KNEW NOW HE WAS TO SEE HER always—his wife and the Lovely Lady.

THE END



THE COUNTRY LIFE PRESS

GARDEN CITY, N.Y.

End of the Project Gutenberg EBook of The Lovely Lady, by Mary Austin

*** END OF THIS PROJECT GUTENBERG EBOOK THE LOVELY LADY ***

***** This file should be named 20359-h.htm or 20359-h.zip *****
This and all associated files of various formats will be found in:
http://www.gutenberg.org/2/0/3/5/20359/

Produced by Hillie Plantinga and the Online Distributed Proofreading Team at http://www.ppdp.net (This file was produced from images generously made available by The Internet Archive/American Libraries.)

Updated editions will replace the previous one--the old editions will be renamed.

Creating the works from public domain print editions means that no one owns a United States copyright in these works, so the Foundation (and you!) can copy and distribute it in the United States without permission and without paying copyright royalties. Special rules,

set forth in the General Terms of Use part of this license, apply to copying and distributing Project Gutenberg-tm electronic works to protect the PROJECT GUTENBERG-tm concept and trademark. Project Gutenberg is a registered trademark, and may not be used if you charge for the eBooks, unless you receive specific permission. If

you do not charge anything for copies of this eBook, complying with the rules is very easy. You may use this eBook for nearly any purpose such as creation of derivative works, reports, performances and research. They may be modified and printed and given away--you may do

do practically ANYTHING with public domain eBooks. Redistribution is subject to the trademark license, especially commercial redistribution.

THE FULL PROJECT GUTENBERG LICENSE PLEASE READ THIS BEFORE YOU DISTRIBUTE OR USE THIS WORK

*** START: FULL LICENSE ***

Project

To protect the Project Gutenberg-tm mission of promoting the free distribution of electronic works, by using or distributing this work (or any other work associated in any way with the phrase "Project

Gutenberg"), you agree to comply with all the terms of the Full Project

Gutenberg-tm License (available with this file or online at http://gutenberg.net/license).

Gutenberg-tm electronic works 1.A. By reading or using any part of this Project Gutenberg-tm electronic work, you indicate that you have read, understand, agree

Section 1. General Terms of Use and Redistributing Project

and accept all the terms of this license and intellectual property (trademark/copyright) agreement. If you do not agree to abide by a11 the terms of this agreement, you must cease using and return or

destrov all copies of Project Gutenberg-tm electronic works in your possession. If you paid a fee for obtaining a copy of or access to a Project Gutenberg-tm electronic work and you do not agree to be bound by the terms of this agreement, you may obtain a refund from the person or

entity to whom you paid the fee as set forth in paragraph 1.E.8. 1.B. "Project Gutenberg" is a registered trademark. It may only be

used on or associated in any way with an electronic work by people who agree to be bound by the terms of this agreement. There are a few things that you can do with most Project Gutenberg-tm electronic works even without complying with the full terms of this agreement. See

paragraph 1.C below. There are a lot of things you can do with

Gutenberg-tm electronic works if you follow the terms of this agreement and help preserve free future access to Project Gutenberg-tm electronic works. See paragraph 1.E below.

1.C. The Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation ("the Foundation" or PGLAF), owns a compilation copyright in the collection of Project

Gutenberg-tm electronic works. Nearly all the individual works in the collection are in the public domain in the United States. If an individual work is in the public domain in the United States and you are located in the United States, we do not claim a right to prevent

vou from

copying, distributing, performing, displaying or creating derivative works based on the work as long as all references to Project Gutenberg are removed. Of course, we hope that you will support the Project Gutenberg-tm mission of promoting free access to electronic works by freely sharing Project Gutenberg-tm works in compliance with the terms of this agreement for keeping the Project Gutenberg-tm name associated with the work. You can easily comply with the terms of this agreement by keeping this work in the same format with its attached full Project

keeping this work in the same format with its attached full Project Gutenberg-tm License when you share it without charge with others.

1.D. The copyright laws of the place where you are located also govern what you can do with this work. Copyright laws in most countries are in a constant state of change. If you are outside the United States, check the laws of your country in addition to the terms of this agreement before downloading, copying, displaying, performing, distributing or

creating derivative works based on this work or any other Project Gutenberg-tm work. The Foundation makes no representations concerning the copyright status of any work in any country outside the United 1.E. Unless you have removed all references to Project Gutenberg: 1.E.1. The following sentence, with active links to, or other

States.

additional

immediate access to, the full Project Gutenberg-tm License must appear prominently whenever any copy of a Project Gutenberg-tm work (any work on which the

phrase "Project Gutenberg" appears, or with which the phrase
"Project
Gutenberg" is associated) is accessed, displayed, performed,
viewed,
copied or distributed:

This eBook is for the use of anyone anywhere at no cost and with almost no restrictions whatsoever. You may copy it, give it away or

re-use it under the terms of the Project Gutenberg License included with this eBook or online at www.gutenberg.net

1.E.2. If an individual Project Gutenberg-tm electronic work is derived from the public domain (does not contain a notice indicating that it is

posted with permission of the copyright holder), the work can be copied and distributed to anyone in the United States without paying any fees or charges. If you are redistributing or providing access to a work with the phrase "Project Gutenberg" associated with or appearing on the work, you must comply either with the requirements of paragraphs

work, you must comply either with the requirements of paragraphs 1.E.1 through 1.E.7 or obtain permission for the use of the work and the Project Gutenberg-tm trademark as set forth in paragraphs 1.E.8 or 1.E.9.

1.E.3. If an individual Project Gutenberg-tm electronic work is posted with the permission of the copyright holder, your use and distribution must comply with both paragraphs 1.E.1 through 1.E.7 and any

terms imposed by the copyright holder. Additional terms will be

linked to the Project Gutenberg-tm License for all works posted with the permission of the copyright holder found at the beginning of this work. 1.E.4. Do not unlink or detach or remove the full Project Gutenberg-tm License terms from this work, or any files containing a part of this work or any other work associated with Project Gutenberg-tm. 1.E.5. Do not copy, display, perform, distribute or redistribute this electronic work, or any part of this electronic work, without prominently displaying the sentence set forth in paragraph 1.E.1

with active links or immediate access to the full terms of the Project Gutenberg-tm License.

1.E.6. You may convert to and distribute this work in any binary, compressed, marked up, nonproprietary or proprietary form, including any word processing or hypertext form. However, if you provide access to or distribute copies of a Project Gutenberg-tm work in a format other than "Plain Vanilla ASCII" or other format used in the official version posted on the official Project Gutenberg-tm web site (www.gutenberg.net),

you must, at no additional cost, fee or expense to the user, provide a copy, a means of exporting a copy, or a means of obtaining a copy upon request, of the work in its original "Plain Vanilla ASCII" or other form. Any alternate format must include the full Project Gutenberg-

License as specified in paragraph 1.E.1. 1.E.7. Do not charge a fee for access to, viewing, displaying, performing, copying or distributing any Project Gutenberg-tm works unless you comply with paragraph 1.E.8 or 1.E.9.

1.E.8. You may charge a reasonable fee for copies of or providing access to or distributing Project Gutenberg-tm electronic works

provided

you already use to calculate your applicable taxes. The fee is owed to the owner of the Project Gutenberg-tm trademark, but he has agreed to donate royalties under this paragraph to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation. Royalty payments

must be paid within 60 days following each date on which you prepare (or are legally required to prepare) your periodic tax returns. Royalty payments should be clearly marked as such and sent to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation at the address specified in Section 4, "Information about donations to

the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation."

- You provide a full refund of any money paid by a user who

of receipt of the work.

Gutenberg-tm

- You pay a royalty fee of 20% of the gross profits you derive from the use of Project Gutenberg-tm works calculated using the method

that

notifies
you in writing (or by e-mail) within 30 days of receipt that s/he
does not agree to the terms of the full Project Gutenberg-tm
License. You must require such a user to return or
destroy all copies of the works possessed in a physical medium
and discontinue all use of and all access to other copies of
Project Gutenberg-tm works.

- You provide, in accordance with paragraph 1.F.3, a full refund of
any
money paid for a work or a replacement copy, if a defect in the
electronic work is discovered and reported to you within 90 days

Foundation as set forth in Section 3 below.

1.F.

1.F.1. Project Gutenberg volunteers and employees expend considerable

electronic work or group of works on different terms than are set forth in this agreement, you must obtain permission in writing from both the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation and Michael Hart, the owner of the Project Gutenberg-tm trademark. Contact the

- You comply with all other terms of this agreement for free

1.E.9. If you wish to charge a fee or distribute a Project

distribution of Project Gutenberg-tm works.

proofread public domain works in creating the Project Gutenberg-tm collection. Despite these efforts, Project Gutenberg-tm electronic works, and the medium on which they may be stored, may contain "Defects," such as, but not limited to, incomplete, inaccurate or corrupt data, transcription errors, a copyright or other intellectual property infringement, a defective or damaged disk or other medium, computer virus, or computer codes that damage or cannot be read by

effort to identify, do copyright research on, transcribe and

your equipment. 1.F.2. LIMITED WARRANTY, DISCLAIMER OF DAMAGES - Except for the "Right of Replacement or Refund" described in paragraph 1.F.3, the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, the owner of the Project Gutenberg-tm trademark, and any other party distributing a Project

Gutenberg-tm electronic work under this agreement, disclaim all liability to you for damages, costs and expenses, including legal fees. YOU AGREE THAT YOU HAVE NO REMEDIES FOR NEGLIGENCE, STRICT LIABILITY, BREACH OF WARRANTY OR BREACH OF CONTRACT EXCEPT THOSE PROVIDED IN PARAGRAPH F3. YOU AGREE THAT THE FOUNDATION, THE TRADEMARK OWNER, AND ANY DISTRIBUTOR UNDER THIS AGREEMENT WILL NOT BE. LIABLE TO YOU FOR ACTUAL, DIRECT, INDIRECT, CONSEQUENTIAL, PUNITIVE

OR INCIDENTAL DAMAGES EVEN IF YOU GIVE NOTICE OF THE POSSIBILITY OF SUCH DAMAGE. 1.F.3. LIMITED RIGHT OF REPLACEMENT OR REFUND - If you discover a

defect in this electronic work within 90 days of receiving it, you can receive a refund of the money (if any) you paid for it by sending a written explanation to the person you received the work from. If vou

received the work on a physical medium, you must return the medium with

your written explanation. The person or entity that provided you with

the defective work may elect to provide a replacement copy in lieu of a refund. If you received the work electronically, the person or

entity

VGOD is also defective, you may demand a refund in writing without further opportunities to fix the problem. 1.F.4. Except for the limited right of replacement or refund set forth in paragraph 1.F.3, this work is provided to you 'AS-IS' WITH NO WARRANTIES OF ANY KIND, EXPRESS OR IMPLIED, INCLUDING BUT NOT LIMITED TO WARRANTIES OF MERCHANTIBILITY OR FITNESS FOR ANY PURPOSE. 1.F.5. Some states do not allow disclaimers of certain implied warranties or the exclusion or limitation of certain types of damages. If any disclaimer or limitation set forth in this agreement violates the law of the state applicable to this agreement, the agreement shall interpreted to make the maximum disclaimer or limitation permitted the applicable state law. The invalidity or unenforceability of any

be

bv

provisions.

Gutenberg-tm

any

providing it to you may choose to give you a second opportunity to receive the work electronically in lieu of a refund. If the second

the trademark owner, any agent or employee of the Foundation, anyone providing copies of Project Gutenberg-tm electronic works in accordance with this agreement, and any volunteers associated with the production. promotion and distribution of Project Gutenberg-tm electronic works. harmless from all liability, costs and expenses, including legal fees. that arise directly or indirectly from any of the following which vou do or cause to occur: (a) distribution of this or any Project

work, (b) alteration, modification, or additions or deletions to

1.F.6. INDEMNITY - You agree to indemnify and hold the Foundation,

provision of this agreement shall not void the remaining

Project Gutenberg-tm work, and (c) any Defect you cause.

Section 2. Information about the Mission of Project Gutenberg-tm

Project Gutenberg-tm is synonymous with the free distribution of electronic works in formats readable by the widest variety of

computers

including obsolete, old, middle-aged and new computers. It exists because of the efforts of hundreds of volunteers and donations from people in all walks of life.

Volunteers and financial support to provide volunteers with the assistance they need, is critical to reaching Project Gutenbergtm's

goals and ensuring that the Project Gutenberg-tm collection will remain freely available for generations to come. In 2001, the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation was created to provide a secure and permanent future for Project Gutenberg-tm and future generations.

To learn more about the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive

Foundation
and how your efforts and donations can help, see Sections 3 and 4
and the Foundation web page at http://www.pglaf.org.

Section 3. Information about the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive
Foundation

The Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation is a non profit 501(c)(3) educational corporation organized under the laws of the state of Mississippi and granted tax exempt status by the Internal Revenue Service. The Foundation's EIN or federal tax identification number is 64-6221541. Its 501(c)(3) letter is posted at http://pglaf.org/fundraising. Contributions to the Project Gutenberg
Literary Archive Foundation are tax deductible to the full extent

permitted by U.S. federal laws and your state's laws.

The Foundation's principal office is located at 4557 Melan Dr. S. Fairbanks, AK, 99712., but its volunteers and employees are scattered

throughout numerous locations. Its business office is located at

information can be found at the Foundation's web site and official page at http://pglaf.org

For additional contact information:
Dr. Gregory B. Newby
Chief Executive and Director
donewby@pqlaf.org

809 North 1500 West, Salt Lake City, UT 84116, (801) 596-1887,

business@pglaf.org. Email contact links and up to date contact

email

he

Section 4. Information about Donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation

Project Gutenberg-tm depends upon and cannot survive without wide spread public support and donations to carry out its mission of

increasing the number of public domain and licensed works that can

Freely distributed in machine readable form accessible by the widest array of equipment including outdated equipment. Many small donations (Si to \$5,000) are particularly important to maintaining tax exempt status with the IRS.

The Foundation is committed to complying with the laws regulating charities and charitable donations in all 50 states of the United States. Compliance requirements are not uniform and it takes a considerable effort, much paperwork and many fees to meet and keep up

with these requirements. We do not solicit donations in locations where we have not received written confirmation of compliance. To SEND DONATIONS or determine the status of compliance for any particular state visit http://pglaf.org

While we cannot and do not solicit contributions from states where we

we have not met the solicitation requirements, we know of no prohibition against accepting unsolicited donations from donors in such states who approach us with offers to donate.

International donations are gratefully accepted, but we cannot make

outside the United States. U.S. laws alone swamp our small staff.

Please check the Project Gutenberg Web pages for current donation
methods and addresses. Donations are accepted in a number of other
ways including including checks, online payments and credit card

any statements concerning tax treatment of donations received from

ways including including checks, online payments and credit card donations. To donate, please visit: http://pglaf.org/donate

Section 5. General Information About Project Gutenberg-tm electronic works.

shared

Professor Michael S. Hart is the originator of the Project Gutenberg-tm concept of a library of electronic works that could be freely

Project Gutenberg-tm eBooks are often created from several printed editions, all of which are confirmed as Public Domain in the U.S. unless a copyright notice is included. Thus, we do not necessarily keep eBooks in compliance with any particular paper edition.

with anyone. For thirty years, he produced and distributed Project Gutenberg-tm eBooks with only a loose network of volunteer support.

Most people start at our Web site which has the main PG search facility:
http://www.gutenberg.net

http://www.gutenberg.net
This Web site includes information about Project Gutenberg-tm,
including how to make donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary
Archive Foundation, how to help produce our new eBooks, and how to

subscribe to our email newsletter to hear about new eBooks.